This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 08188302 1

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Wm. Q. McDowell.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

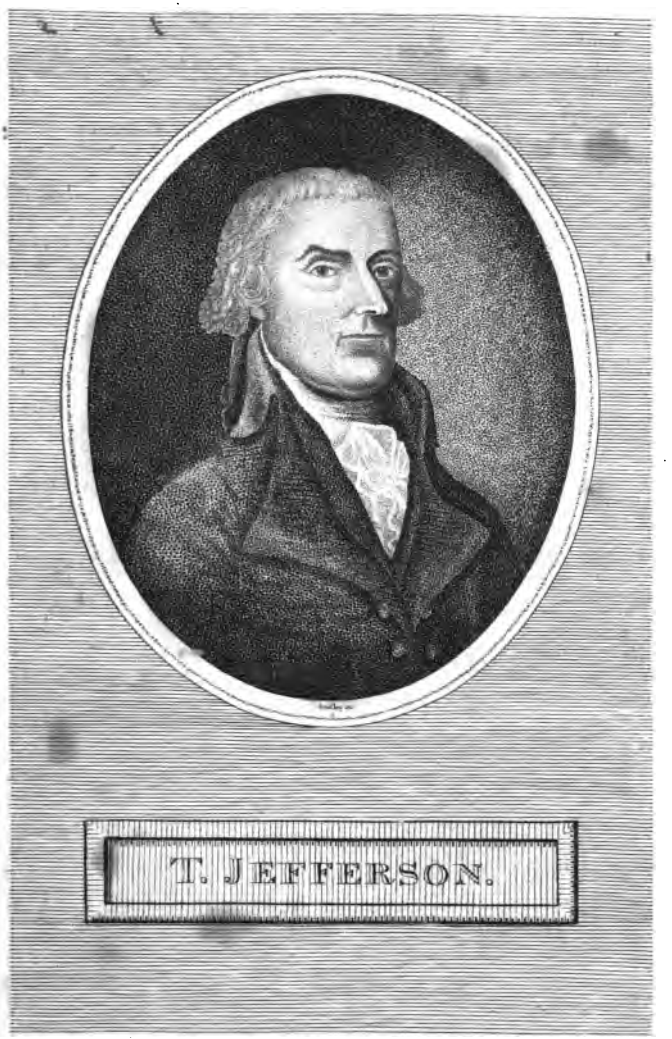
Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

Wm. P. McDowell.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

NOTES

ON THE

STATE OF VIRGINIA.

WITH AN

APPENDIX.

BY THOMAS JEFFERSON.

EIGHTH AMERICAN EDITION.

BOSTON:

PRINTED BY *DAVID CARLISLE*,

For THOMAS & ANDREWS, J. WEST, WEST & GREENLEAF, J. WHITE, & CO. E. & S. LARKIN, J. NANCREDE, MANNING & LORING, Boston; THOMAS & THOMAS, Walpole, N. H.; and B. B. MACANULTY, Salem.

1801.

Checked May 1913

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
246804
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.
1902

Digitized by Google

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE following Notes were written in Virginia, in the year 1781, *and ſomewhat corrected and enlarged in the Winter of* 1782, *in anſwer to Queries propoſed to the author, by a foreigner of diſtinction, then reſiding among us. The ſubjects are all treated imperfectly; ſome ſcarcely touched on. To apologize for this by developing the circumſtances of the time and place of their compoſition, would be to open wounds which have already bled enough. To theſe circumſtances ſome of their imperfections may with truth be aſcribed; the great maſs to the want of information, and want of talents in the writer. He had a few copies printed, which he gave among his friends: and a tranſlation of them has been lately publiſhed in France, but with ſuch alterations as the laws of the preſs in that country rendered neceſſary. They are now offered to the public in their original form and language.*

Feb. 27, 1787.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

		Page
1.	BOUNDARIES of Virginia,	5
2.	Rivers,	17
3.	Sea-ports,	25
4.	Mountains,	*ibid.*
5.	Cafcades,	30
6.	Productions mineral, vegetable, and animal,	36
7.	Climate,	111
8.	Population,	125
9.	Military force,	134
10.	Marine force,	136
11.	Aborigines,	137
12.	Counties and towns,	156
13.	Conftitution,	158
14.	Laws,	191
15.	Colleges, buildings, and roads,	222
16.	Proceedings as to tories,	229
17.	Religion,	232
18.	Manners,	240
19.	Manufactures,	243
20.	Subjects of commerce,	245
21.	Weights, meafures and money,	251
22.	Public revenue and expenfes,	253
23.	Hiftories, memorials and ftate-papers,	260
	APPENDIX, No. I.	299
	——— No. II.	312
	——— No. III.	326
	——— Relative to the murder of Logan's family,	329

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

QUERY I.

AN exact deſcription of the limits and boundaries of the ſtate of *Virginia?*

Virginia is bounded on the Eaſt by the Atlantic; on the north by a line of latitude, croſſing the eaſtern ſhore through Watkins's point, being about 37° 57′ north latitude; from thence by a ſtraight line to Cinquac, near the mouth of Patowmac; thence by the Patowmac, which is common to Virginia and Maryland, to the firſt fountain of its northern branch; thence by a meridian line, paſſing through that fountain till it interſects a line running eaſt and weſt, in latitude 39°. 43′. 42. 4″. which divides Maryland from Pennſylvania, and which was marked by Meſſrs. Maſon and Dixon; thence by that line, and a continuation of it weſtwardly to the completion of five degrees of longitude from the eaſtern boundary of Pennſylvania, in the ſame latitude, and thence by a meridian line to the Ohio: on the Ohio and Miſſiſippi, to latitude 36°. 30′. north: and on the South by the line of latitude laſt mentioned. By admeaſurements through nearly the whole of this laſt line, and ſupplying the unmeaſured parts from good data, the Atlantic and Miſſiſippi are found in this latitude to be 758 miles diſtant, equal to

30°.

Digitized by Google

30°. 38′, of longitude, reckoning 55 miles and 3144 feet to the degree. This being our comprehenſion of longitude, that of our latitude, taken between this and Maſon and Dixon's line, is 3°. 13′. 42. 4″. equal to 223. 3 miles, ſuppoſing a degree of a great circle to be 69 m. 864 f. as computed by Caſſini. Theſe boundaries include an area ſomewhat triangular, of 121,525 ſquare miles, whereof 79,650 lie weſtward of the Alleghaney mountains, and 57,034 weſtward of the meridian of the mouth of the Great Kanhaway. This ſtate is therefore one third larger than the iſlands of Great-Britain and Ireland, which are reckoned at 88,357 ſquare miles.

Theſe limits reſult from, 1. The ancient charters from the crown of England. 2. The grant of Maryland to the lord Baltimore, and the ſubſequent determinations of the Britiſh court as to the extent of that grant. 3. The grant of Pennſylvania to William Penn, and a compact between the general aſſemblies of the commonwealths of Virginia and Pennſylvania as to the extent of that grant. 4. The grant of Carolina, and actual location of its northern boundary, by conſent of both parties. 5. The treaty of Paris of 1763. 6. The confirmation of the charters of the neighboring ſtates by the convention of *Virginia* at the time of conſtituting their commonwealth. 7. The ceſſion made by *Virginia* to Congreſs of all the lands to which they had title on the north ſide of the Ohio.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY II.

A NOTICE of its rivers, rivulets, and how far they are navigable?

An inſpection of a map of *Virginia*, will give a better idea of the geography of its rivers, than any deſcription in writing. Their navigation may be imperfectly noted.

Roanoke, ſo far as it lies within this ſtate, is no where navigable but for canoes, or light batteaux; and even for theſe, in ſuch detached parcels as to have prevented the inhabitants from availing themſelves of it at all.

James River, and its waters, afford navigation as follows:

The whole of *Elizabeth River*, the loweſt of thoſe which run into James River, is a harbor, and would contain upwards of 300 ſhips. The channel is from 150 to 200 fathoms wide, and at common flood tide, affords 18 feet water to Norfolk. The Strafford, a 60 gun ſhip, went there, lightening herſelf to croſs the bar at Sowell's Point. The Fier Rodrigue, pierced for 64 guns, and carrying 50, went there without lightening. Craney iſland, at the mouth of this river commands its channel tolerably well.

Nanſemond River is navigable to Sleepy Hole, for veſſels of 250 tons; to Suffolk, for thoſe of 100 tons; and to Milner's for thoſe of 25.

Pagan

Digitized by Google

Pagan creek affords 8 or 10 feet water to Smithfield, which admits veſſels of 20 tons.

Chickahominy has at its mouth a bar, on which is only 12 feet water at common flood tide. Veſſels paſſing that may go 8 miles up the river; thoſe of 10 feet draught may go four miles further, and thoſe of ſix tons burthen, 20 miles further.

Appamattox may be navigated as far as Broadways, by any veſſel which has croſſed Harriſon's bar in James River; it keeps 8 or 10 feet water a mile or two higher up to Fiſher's bar, and 4 feet on that and upwards to Peterſburgh, where all navigation ceaſes.

James River itſelf affords harbor for veſſels of any ſize in Hampton road, but not in ſafety through the whole winter; and there is navigable water for them as far as Mulberry iſland. A 40 gun ſhip goes to James town, and, lightening herſelf, may paſs to Harriſon's bar, on which there is only 15 feet water. Veſſels of 250 tons may go to Warwick; thoſe of 125 go to Rocket's, a mile below Richmond; from thence is about 7 feet water to Richmond; and about the centre of the town, four feet and a half, where the navigation is interrupted by falls, which in a courſe of ſix miles, deſcend about 80 feet perpendicular: above theſe it is reſumed in canoes, and batteaux, and proſecuted ſafely and advantageouſly within 10 miles of the Blue Ridge; and even through the Blue Ridge a ton weight has been brought: and the expenſe would not be

Digitized by Google

be great, when compared with its object, to open a tolerable navigation up Jackſon's river and Carpenter's Creek, to within 25 miles of Howard's Creek of Green Briar, both of which have then water enough to float veſſels into the Great Kanhaway. In ſome future ſtate of population, I think it poſſible, that its navigation may alſo be made to interlock with that of the Patowmac, and through that to communicate by a ſhort portage with the Ohio. It is to be noted, that this river is called in the maps *James River*, only to its confluence with the Rivanna: thence to the Blue Ridge it is called the Fluvanna: and thence to its ſource, Jackſon's River. But in common ſpeech, it is called James River to its ſource.

The *Rivanna*, a branch of James River, is navigable for canoes and batteaux to its interſection with the South Weſt Mountains, which is about 22 miles; and may eaſily be opened to navigation through theſe mountains to its fork above Charlotteſville.

York River, at York town, affords the beſt harbor in the ſtate for veſſels of the largeſt ſize. The river there narrows to the width of a mile, and is contained within very high banks, cloſe under which the veſſels may ride. It holds 4 fathom water at high tide for 25 miles above York to the mouth of Poropotank, where the river is a mile and a half wide, and the channel only 75 fathom, and paſſing under a high bank. At the confluence of *Pamunkey* and *Mattapony*, it is re-

Digitized by Google

duced to 3 fathom depth, which continues up Pamunkey to Cumberland, where the width is 100 yards, and up Mattapony to within two miles of Frazer's ferry, where it becomes $2\frac{1}{2}$ fathom deep, and holds that about five miles. Pamunkey is then capable of navigation for loaded flats to Brockman's bridge, fifty miles above Hannover town, and Mattapony to Downer's bridge, 70 miles above its mouth.

Piankatank, the little rivers making out of *Mobjack Bay* and those of the *Eastern shore*, receive only very small vessels, and these can but enter them.

Rappahannock affords 4 fathom water to Hobb's hole, and 2 fathom from thence to Fredericksburg.

Patowmac is $7\frac{1}{2}$ miles wide at the mouth; $4\frac{1}{2}$ at Nomony bay; 3 at Aquia; $1\frac{1}{2}$ at Halooing point; $1\frac{1}{4}$ at Alexandria. Its soundings are, 7 fathom at the mouth; 5 at St. George's island; $4\frac{1}{2}$ at Lower Matchodic; 3 at Swan's point, and thence up to Alexandria; thence 10 feet water to the falls, which are 13 miles above Alexandria. These falls are 15 miles in length, and of very great descent, and the navigation above them for batteaux and canoes, is so much interrupted as to be little used. It is, however, used in a small degree up the Cohongoronta branch as far as Fort Cumberland, which was at the mouth of Willis's creek; and is capable, at no great expense, of being rendered very practicable. The Shenandoah branch interlocks with James

Digitized by Google

James river about the Blue Ridge, and may perhaps in future be opened.

The *Miſſiſippi* will be one of the principal channels of future commerce for the country weſtward of the Alleghaney. From the mouth of this river to where it receives the Ohio, is 1000 miles by water, but only 500 by land, paſſing through the Chickaſaw country. From the mouth of the Ohio to that of the Miſſouri, is 230 miles by water, and 140 by land. From thence to the mouth of the Illinois river, is about 25 miles. The Miſſiſippi, below the mouth of the Miſſouri, is always muddy, and abounding with ſand bars, which frequently change their places. However, it carries 15 feet water to the mouth of the Ohio, to which place it is from one and a half to two miles wide, and thence to Kaſkaſkia from one mile to a mile and a quarter wide. Its current is ſo rapid, that it never can be ſtemmed by the force of the wind alone, acting on ſails. Any veſſel, however, navigated with oars, may come up at any time, and receive much aid from the wind. A batteau paſſes from the mouth of Ohio to the mouth of Miſſiſippi in three weeks, and is from two to three months getting up again. During its floods, which are periodical as thoſe of the Nile, the largeſt veſſels may paſs down it, if their ſteerage can be inſured. Theſe floods begin in April, and the river returns into its banks early in Auguſt. The inundation extends further on the weſtern than eaſtern ſide, covering the lands in ſome places for 50 miles from its banks.

Digitized by Google

banks. Above the mouth of the Miſſouri, it becomes much ſuch a river as the Ohio, like it clear, and gentle in its current, not quite ſo wide, the period of its floods nearly the ſame, but not riſing to ſo great a height. The ſtreets of the village at Cohoes are not more than 10 feet above the ordinary level of the water, and yet were never overflowed. Its bed deepens every year. Cohoes, in the memory of many people now living, was inſulated by every flood of the river. What was the eaſtern channel has now become a lake, 9 miles in length and one in width, into which the river at this day never flows. This river yields turtle of a peculiar kind, perch, trout, gar, pike, mullets, herrings, carp, ſpatula-fiſh of 50lb. weight, cat-fiſh, of 100lb. weight, buffalo-fiſh, and ſturgeon. Aligators or crocodiles have been ſeen as high up as the Acanſas. It alſo abounds in herons, cranes, ducks, brant, geeſe, and ſwans. Its paſſage is commanded by a fort eſtabliſhed by this ſtate, five miles below the mouth of the Ohio, and ten miles above the Carolina boundary.

The Miſſouri, ſince the treaty of Paris, the Illinois and northern branches of the Ohio, ſince the ceſſion to Congreſs, are no longer within our limits. Yet having been ſo heretofore, and ſtill opening to us channels of extenſive communication with the weſtern and north-weſtern country, they ſhall be noted in their order.

The *Miſſouri* is, in fact, the principal river, contributing

Digitized by Google

uring more to the common ſtream than does the Miſſiſippi, even after its junction with the Illinois. It is remarkably cold, muddy, and rapid. Its overflowings are conſiderable. They happen during the months of June and July. Their commencement being ſo much later than thoſe of the Miſſiſippi, would induce a belief that the ſources of the Miſſouri are northward of thoſe of the Miſſiſippi, unleſs we ſuppoſe that the cold increaſes again with the aſcent of the land from the Miſſiſippi weſtwardly. That this aſcent is great, is proved by the rapidity of the river. Six miles above the mouth it is brought within the compaſs of a quarter of a mile's width: yet the Spaniſh merchants at Pancore, or St. Louis, ſay they go two thouſand miles up it. It heads far weſtward of the Rio Norte, or North River. There is, in the villages of Kaſkaſkia, Cohoes and St. Vicennes, no inconſiderable quantity of plate, ſaid to have been plundered during the laſt war by the Indians from the churches and private houſes of Santa Fé, on the North River, and brought to theſe villages for ſale. From the mouth of Ohio to Santa Fé, are forty days journey, or about 1000 miles. What is the ſhorteſt diſtance between the navigable waters of the Miſſouri, and thoſe of the North River, or how far this is navigable above Santa Fé, I could never learn. From Santa Fé to its mouth in the Gulph of Mexico is about 1200 miles. The road from New Orleans to Mexico croſſes this river at the poſt of Rio Norte,

Digitized by Google

800 miles below Santa Fé: and from this poſt to New Orleans is about 1200 miles: thus making 2000 miles between Santa Fé and New Orleans, paſſing down the North River, Red River and Miſſiſippi; whereas it is 2230 through the Miſſouri and Miſſiſippi. From the ſame poſt of Rio Norte, paſſing near the mines of La Sierra and Laiguana, which are between the North River and the river Salina to Sartilla, is 375 miles; and from thence paſſing the mines of Charcas, Zaccatecas and Potoſi, to the city of Mexico is 375 miles; in all, 1550 miles from Santa Fé to the city of Mexico. From New Orleans to the city of Mexico is about 1950 miles: the roads, after ſetting out from the Red River, near Natichitoches, keeping generally parallel with the coaſt, and about two hundred miles from it, till it enters the city of Mexico.

The *Illinois* is a fine river, clear, gentle, and without rapids; inſomuch that it is navigable for batteaux to its ſource. From thence is a portage of two miles only to the Chickago, which affords a batteau navigation of 16 miles to its entrance into lake Michigan. The Illinois, about ten miles above its mouth, is 300 yards wide.

The *Kaſkaſkia* is 100 yards wide at its entrance into the Miſſiſippi, and preſerves that breadth to the Buffalo plains, 70 miles above. So far alſo it is navigable for loaded batteaux, and perhaps much further. It is not rapid.

The *Ohio* is the moſt beautiful river on earth. Its current gentle, waters clear, and boſom ſmooth and unbroken by rocks and rapids, a ſingle inſtance only excepted.

Digitized by Google

It

It is a $\frac{1}{4}$ of a mile wide at Fort Pitt:

500 Yards at the mouth of the Great Kanhaway:

1 Mile and 25 poles at Louiſville:

$\frac{1}{4}$ Of a mile on the rapids, three or four miles below Louiſville:

$\frac{1}{2}$ A mile where the low country begins, which is 20 miles above Green River:

$1\frac{1}{4}$ At the receipt of the Taniſſee:

And a mile wide at the mouth.

Its length, as meaſured according to its meanders by Capt. Hutchins, is as follows:

From Fort Pitt.

	Miles.		Miles.
To Log's Town	$18\frac{1}{2}$	Little Miami	$126\frac{1}{4}$
Big Beaver Creek	$10\frac{3}{4}$	Licking Creek	8
Little Beaver Creek	$13\frac{1}{2}$	Great Miami	$26\frac{1}{4}$
Yellow Creek	$11\frac{3}{4}$	Big Bones	$32\frac{1}{2}$
Two Creeks	$21\frac{1}{4}$	Kentucky	$44\frac{1}{4}$
Long Reach	$53\frac{1}{4}$	Rapids	$77\frac{1}{4}$
End Long Reach	$16\frac{1}{2}$	Low Country	$155\frac{3}{4}$
Muſkingum	$25\frac{1}{2}$	Buffalo River	$64\frac{1}{4}$
Little Kanhaway	$12\frac{1}{4}$	Wabaſh	$97\frac{1}{4}$
Hockhocking	16	Big Cave	$42\frac{3}{4}$
Great Kanhaway	$82\frac{1}{2}$	Shawanee River	$52\frac{1}{2}$
Guiandot	$43\frac{3}{4}$	Cherokee	13
Sandy Creek	$14\frac{1}{2}$	Maſſac	11
Sioto	$48\frac{1}{4}$	Miſſiſippi	46
			1188

In common winter and ſpring tides it affords 15 feet water to Louiſville, 10 feet to Le Tarte's rapids, 40 miles above the mouth of the Great Kanhaway, and a ſufficiency at all times for light batteaux and canoes to Fort Pitt. The rapids are in latitude 38° 8′. The

Digitized by Google

The inundations of this river begin about the laſt of March, and ſubſide in July. During theſe a firſt rate man of war may be carried from Louiſville to New Orleans, if the ſudden turns of the river and the ſtrength of its current will admit a ſafe ſteerage. The rapids at Louiſville defcend about 30 feet in a length of a mile and a half. The bed of the river there is a ſolid rock, and is divided by an iſland into two branches, the ſouthern of which is about 200 yards wide, and is dry four months in the year. The bed of the northern branch is worn into channels by the conſtant courſe of the water, and attrition of the pebble ſtones carried on with that, ſo as to be paſſable for batteaux through the greater part of the year. Yet it is thought that the ſouthern arm may be the moſt eaſily opened for conſtant navigation. The riſe of the waters in theſe rapids does not exceed 10 or 12 feet. A part of this iſland is ſo high as to have been never overflowed, and to command the ſettlement at Louiſville, which is oppoſite to it. The fort, however, is ſituated at the head of the falls. The ground on the ſouth ſide riſes very gradually.

The *Taniſſee*, Cherokee or Hogohege River is 600 yards wide at its mouth, $\frac{1}{4}$ of a mile at the mouth of Holſton, and 200 yards at Chotee, which is 20 miles above Holſton, and 300 miles above the mouth of the Taniſſee. This river croſſes the ſouthern boundary of Virginia, 58 miles from the Miſſiſippi. Its current is moderate. It is navigable for loaded

Digitized by Google boats

boats of any burthen to the Muſcle ſhoals, where the river paſſes through the Cumberland mountain. Theſe ſhoals are 6 or 8 miles long, paſſable downwards for loaded canoes, but not upwards, unleſs there be a ſwell in the river. Above theſe the navigation for loaded canoes and batteaux continues to the Long iſland. This river has its inundations alſo. Above the Chickamogga towns is a whirlpool called the Sucking-pot, which takes in trunks of trees or boats, and throws them out again half a mile below. It is avoided by keeping very cloſe to the bank, on the ſouth ſide. There are but a few miles portage between a branch of this river and the navigable waters of the river Mobile, which runs into the Gulph of Mexico.

Cumberland, or Shawanee River, interſects the boundary between Virginia and North Carolina, 67 miles from the Miſſiſippi, and again 198 miles from the ſame river, a little above the entrance of Obey's River into the Cumberland. Its clear fork croſſes the ſame boundary about 300 miles from the Miſſiſippi. Cumberland is a very gentle ſtream, navigable for loaded batteaux 800 miles, without interruption; then intervene ſome rapids of 15 miles in length, after which it is again navigable 70 miles upwards, which brings you within 10 miles of the Cumberland mountains. It is about 120 yards wide through its whole courſe, from the head of its navigation to its mouth.

The *Wabaſh* is a very beautiful river, 400 yards wide at the mouth, and 300 at St. Vincennes, which

Digitized by Google

is a poſt 100 miles above the mouth, in a direct line. Within this ſpace there are two ſmall rapids, which give very little obſtruction to the navigation. It is 400 yards wide at the mouth, and navigable 30 leagues upwards for canoes and ſmall boats. From the mouth of Maple River to that of Eel River is about 80 miles in a direct line, the river continuing navigable, and from one to two hundred yards in width. The Eel River is 150 yards wide, and affords at all times navigation for periaguas, to within 18 miles of the Miami of the lake. The Wabaſh, from the mouth of Eel River to Little River, a diſtance of 50 miles direct, is interrupted with frequent rapids and ſhoals, which obſtruct the navigation, except in a ſwell. Little River affords navigation during a ſwell to within 3 miles of the Miami, which thence affords a ſimilar navigation into Lake Erié, 100 miles diſtant in a direct line. The Wabaſh overflows periodically in correſpondence with the Ohio, and in ſome places two leagues from its banks.

Green River is navigable for loaded batteaux at all times 50 miles upwards; but it is then interrupted by impaſſable rapids, above which the navigation again commences, and continues good 30 or 40 miles to the mouth of Barren River.

Kentucky River is 90 yards wide at the mouth, and alſo at Boonſborough, 80 miles above. It affords a navigation for loaded batteaux 180 miles in a direct line, in the winter tides.

The

Digitized by Google

The *Great Miami* of the Ohio, is 200 yards wide at the mouth. At the Pickawee towns, 75 miles above, it is reduced to 30 yards; it is nevertheleſs, navigable for loaded canoes 50 miles above theſe towns. The portage from its weſtern branch into the Miami of Lake Erié, is 5 miles; that from its eaſtern branch into Sanduſky River, is of 9 miles.

Salt River is at all times navigable for loaded batteaux 70 or 80 miles. It is 80 yards wide at its mouth, and keeps that width to its fork, 25 miles above.

The *Little Miami* of the Ohio, is 60 or 70 yards wide at its mouth, 60 miles to its ſource, and affords no navigation.

The *Sioto* is 250 yards wide at its mouth, which is in latitude 38° 22′. and at the Saltlick towns, 200 miles above the mouth, it is yet 100 yards wide. To theſe towns it is navigable for loaded batteaux, and its eaſtern branch affords navigation almoſt to its ſource.

Great Sandy River is about 60 yards wide, and navigable ſixty miles for loaded batteaux.

Guiandot is about the width of the river laſt mentioned, but is more rapid. It may be navigated by canoes 60 miles.

The *Great Kanhaway* is a river of conſiderable note for the fertility of its lands, and ſtill more, as leading towards the head waters of James River. Nevertheleſs, it is doubtful whether its great and numerous rapids will admit a navigation, but at an expenſe to which it will require ages to render its inhabitants equal.

Digitized by Google

equal. The great obſtacles begin at what is called the Great Falls, 90 miles above the mouth, below which are only five or ſix rapids, and theſe paſſable, with ſome difficulty, even at low water. From the falls to the mouth of Greenbriar is 100 miles, and thence to the lead mines 120. It is 280 yards wide at its mouth.

Hockhocking is 80 yards wide at its mouth, and yields navigation for loaded batteaux to the Preſſplace, 60 miles above its mouth.

The *Little Kanhaway* is 150 yards wide at the mouth. It yields a navigation of 10 miles only. Perhaps its northern branch, called Junius's Creek, which interlocks with the weſtern of Monongahela, may one day admit a ſhorter paſſage from the latter into the Ohio.

The *Muſkingum* is 280 yards wide at its mouth, and 200 yards at the lower Indian towns, 150 miles upwards. It is navigable for ſmall batteaux to within one mile of a navigable part of Cayahoga River, which runs into Lake Erié.

At Fort Pitt the River Ohio loſes its name, branching into the Monongahela and Alleghaney.

The *Monongahela* is 400 yards wide at its mouth. From thence is 12 or 15 miles to the mouth of Yohoganey, where it is 300 yards wide. Thence to Redſtone by water is 50 miles, by land 30. Then to the mouth of Cheat River by water 40 miles, by land 28, the width continuing at 300 yards, and the navigation good for boats. Thence the width is about 200 yards to the Weſtern Fork, 50 miles higher, and the navigation

Digitized by Google

navigation frequently interrupted by rapids, which however with a ſwell of two or three feet become very paſſable for boats. It then admits light boats, except in dry ſeaſons, 65 miles further to the head of Tygart's Valley, preſenting only ſome ſmall rapids and falls of one or two feet perpendicular, and leſſening in its width to 20 yards. The *Weſtern Fork* is navigable in the winter 10 or 15 miles towards the northern of the Little Kanhaway, and will admit a good waggon road to it. The *Yohoganey* is the principal branch of this river. It paſſes through the Laurel mountain, about 30 miles from its mouth; is ſo far from 300 to 150 yards wide, and the navigation much obſtructed in dry weather by rapids and ſhoals. In its paſſage through the mountain it makes very great falls, admitting no navigation for 10 miles to the Turkey Foot. Thence to the Great Croſſings about 20 miles, it is again navigable, except in dry ſeaſons, and at this place is 200 yards wide. The ſources of this river are divided from thoſe of the Patowmac, by the Alleghaney mountain. From the falls, where it interſects the Laurel mountain, to Fort Cumberland, the head of the navigation on the Patowmac, is 40 miles of very mountainous road. Wills's Creek, at the mouth of which was Fort Cumberland, is 30 or 40 yards wide, but affords no navigation as yet. *Cheat* River, another conſiderable branch of the Monongahela, is 200 yards wide at its mouth, and 100 yards at the *Dunkards'* ſettlement, 50 miles higher. It is navigable for boats,

Digitized by Google

boats, except in dry seasons. The boundary between Virginia and Pennsylvania crosses it about 3 or 4 miles above its mouth.

The *Alleghaney* River, with a slight swell, affords navigation for light batteaux to Venango, at the mouth of French Creek, where it is 200 yards wide; and it is practised even to Le Bœuf, from whence there is a portage of 15 miles to Presque isle on Lake Erié.

The country watered by the Mississippi and its eastern branches, constitutes five-eighths of the United States, two of which five-eighths are occupied by the Ohio and its waters: the residuary streams which run into the Gulph of Mexico, the Atlantic, and the St. Laurence, water the remaining three-eighths.

Before we quit the subject of the western waters, we will take a view of their principal connexions with the Atlantic. These are three: the Hudson's River, the Patowmac, and the Mississippi itself. Down the last will pass all heavy commodities. But the navigation through the Gulph of Mexico is so dangerous, and that up the Mississippi so difficult and tedious, that it is thought probable that European merchandize will not return through that channel. It is most likely that flour, timber, and other heavy articles will be floated on rafts, which will themselves be an article for sale as well as their loading, the navigators returning by land, or in light batteaux. There will therefore be a competition between the Hudson and Patowmac rivers for the residue of the commerce of all the country

Digitized by Google

country westward of Lake Erié, on the waters of the lakes of the Ohio and upper parts of the Missisippi. To go to New-York, that part of the trade which comes from the lakes or their waters must first be brought into Lake Erié. Between Lake Superior and its waters, and Huron, are the rapids of St. Mary, which will permit boats to pass, but not larger vessels. Lakes Huron and Michigan afford communication with Lake Erié by vessels of 8 feet draft. That part of the trade which comes from the waters of the Missisippi must pass from them through some portage into the waters of the lakes. The portage from the Illinois River into a water of Michigan is of one mile only. From the Wabash, Miami, Muskingum, or Alleghaney, are portages into the waters of Lake Erié, of from one to 15 miles. When the commodities are brought into, and have passed through Lake Erié, there is between that and Ontario an interruption by the falls of Niagara, where the portage is of 8 miles; and between Ontario and the Hudson's River are portages at the falls of Onondago, a little above Oswego, of a quarter of a mile: from Wood Creek to the Mohawks River two miles; at the little falls of the Mohawks River half a mile, and from Schenectady to Albany 16 miles. Besides the increase of expense occasioned by frequent change of carriage, there is an increased risk of pillage produced by committing merchandize to a greater number of hands successively. The Patowmac offers itself under the following circumstances. For the trade

of

Digitized by Google

of the lakes and their waters weſtward of Lake Erie, when it ſhall have entered that lake, it muſt coaſt along its ſouthern ſhore, on account of the number and excellence of its harbors; the northern though ſhorteſt, having few harbors, and theſe unſafe. Having reached Cayahoga, to proceed on to New-York it will have 825 miles and five portages; whereas it is but 425 miles to Alexandria, its emporium on the Patowmac, if it turns into the Cayahoga, and paſſes through that, Bigbeaver, Ohio, Yohogoney, (or Monongahela and Cheat) and Patowmac, and there are but two portages; the firſt of which between Cayahoga and Beaver may be removed by uniting the ſources of theſe waters, which are lakes in the neighborhood of each other, and in a champaign country; the other from the waters of Ohio to Patowmac will be from 15 to 40 miles, according to the trouble which ſhall be taken to approach the two navigations. For the trade of the Ohio, or that which ſhall come into it from its own waters or the Miſſiſippi, it is nearer through the Patowmac to Alexandria, than to New-York by 580 miles, and it is interrupted by one portage only. There is another circumſtance of difference too. The lakes themſelves never freeze, but the communications between them freeze, and the Hudſon's River is itſelf ſhut up by the ice three months in the year; whereas the channel to the Cheſapeak leads directly into a warmer climate. The ſouthern parts of it rarely freeze at all, and whenever the northern do, it is ſo near the ſources of the

Digitized by Google

the rivers, that the frequent floods to which they are liable, break up the ice immediately, ſo that veſſels may paſs through the whole winter, ſubject only to accidental and ſhort delays. Add to all this, that in caſe of a war with our neighbors, the Anglo-Americans or the Indians, the route to New-York becomes a frontier through almoſt its whole length, and all commerce through it ceaſes from that moment. But the channel to New-York is already known to practice; whereas the upper waters of the Ohio and the Patowmac, and the great falls of the latter are yet to be cleared of their fixed obſtructions. (A.)

QUERY III.

A NOTICE of the beſt *Sea Ports* of the ſtate, and how big are the veſſels they can receive?

Having no ports but our rivers and creeks, this *Query* has been anſwered under the preceding one.

QUERY IV.

A NOTICE of its *Mountains?*

For the particular geography of our mountains I muſt refer to *Fry* and *Jefferſon's* map of Virginia; and to *Evans's* analyſis of his map of Ameri-

Digitized by Google

ca, for a more philoſophical view of them than is to be found in any other work. It is worthy notice, that our mountains are not ſolitary and ſcattered confuſedly over the face of the country; but that they commence at about 150 miles from the ſea-coaſt, are diſpoſed in ridges one behind another, running nearly parallel with the ſea-coaſt, though rather approaching as they advance north-eaſtwardly. To the ſouth-weſt, as the tract of country between the ſea-coaſt and the Miſſiſippi becomes narrower, the mountains converge into a ſingle ridge, which as it approaches the Gulph of Mexico, ſubſides into plain country, and gives riſe to ſome of the waters of that Gulph, and particularly to a river called the Apalachicola, probably from the Apalachies, an Indian nation formerly reſiding on it. Hence the mountains giving riſe to that river, and ſeen from its various parts, were called the Apalachian mountains, being in fact the end or termination only of the great ridges paſſing through the continent. European geographers however extended the name northwardly as far as the mountains extended; ſome giving it, after their ſeparation into different ridges, to the Blue ridge, others to the North mountain, others to the Alleghaney, others to the Laurel ridge, as may be ſeen in their different maps. But the fact I believe is, that none of theſe ridges were ever known by that name to the inhabitants, either native or emigrant, but as they ſaw them ſo called in European maps. In the ſame direction

Digitized by Google

generall·

generally are the veins of lime-ſtone, coal, and other minerals hitherto diſcovered: and ſo range the falls of our great rivers. But the courſes of the great rivers are at right angles with theſe. James and Patowmac penetrate through all the ridges of mountains eaſtward of the Alleghaney; that is broken by no water courſe. It is in fact the ſpine of the country between the Atlantic on one ſide, and the Miſſiſippi and St. Laurence on the other. The paſſage of the Patowmac through the Blue ridge is perhaps one of the moſt ſtupendous ſcenes in nature. You ſtand on a very high point of land. On your right comes up the Shenandoah, having ranged along the foot of the mountain an hundred miles to ſeek a vent. On your left approaches the Patowmac, in queſt of a paſſage alſo. In the moment of their junction they ruſh together againſt the mountain, rend it aſunder, and paſs off to the ſea. The firſt glance of this ſcene hurries our ſenſes into the opinion, that this earth has been created in time, that the mountains were formed firſt, that the rivers began to flow afterwards, that in this place particularly they have been dammed up by the Blue ridge of mountains, and have formed an ocean which filled the whole valley; that continuing to riſe they have at length broken over at this ſpot, and have torn the mountain down from its ſummit to its baſe. The piles of rock on each hand, but particularly on the Shenandoah, the evident marks of their diſrupture and avulſion form their beds by the moſt powerful

Digitized by Google

powerful agents of nature, corroborate the impreſſion. But the diſtant finiſhing which nature has given to the picture, is of a very different character. It is a true contraſt to the foreground. It is as placid and delightful, as that is wild and tremendous. For the mountain being cloven aſunder, ſhe preſents to your eye, through the cleft, a ſmall catch of ſmooth blue horizon, at an infinite diſtance in the plain country, inviting you as it were, from the riot and tumult roaring around to paſs through the breach and participate of the calm below. Here the eye ultimately compoſes itſelf; and that way too the road happens actually to lead. You croſs the Patowmac above the junction, paſs along its ſide through the baſe of the mountain for three miles, its terrible precipices hanging in fragments over you, and within about 20 miles reach Fredericktown, and the fine country round that. This ſcene is worth a voyage acroſs the Atlantic. Yet here, as in the neighborhood of the Natural Bridge, are people who have paſſed their lives within half a dozen miles, and have never been to ſurvey theſe monuments of a war between rivers and mountains, which muſt have ſhaken the earth itſelf to its centre. (B.)

The height of our mountains has not yet been eſtimated with any degree of exactneſs. The Alleghaney being the great ridge which divides the waters of the Atlantic from thoſe of the Miſſiſippi, its ſummit is doubtleſs more elevated above the ocean

Digitized by Google

ocean than that of any other mountain. But its relative height, compared with the baſe on which it ſtands, is not ſo great as that of ſome others, the country riſing behind the ſucceſſive ridges like the ſteps of ſtairs. The mountains of the Blue ridge, and of theſe the Peaks of Otter are thought to be of a greater height, meaſured from their baſe, than any others in our country, and perhaps in North America. From data, which may found a tolerable conjecture, we ſuppoſe the higheſt peak to be about 4000 feet perpendicular, which is not a fifth part of the height of the mountains of South America, nor one third of the height which would be neceſſary in our latitude to preſerve ice in the open air unmelted through the year. The ridge of mountains next beyond the Blue ridge, called by us the North mountain, is of the greateſt extent; for which reaſon they were named by the Indians the Endleſs mountains.

A ſubſtance, ſuppoſed to be pumice, found floating on the Miſſiſippi, has induced a conjecture, that there is a volcano on ſome of its waters: and and as theſe are moſtly known to their ſources, except the Miſſouri, our expectations of verifying the conjecture would of courſe be led to the mountains which divide the waters of the Mexican Gulph from thoſe of the South Sea; but no volcano having ever yet been known at ſuch a diſtance from the ſea, we muſt rather ſuppoſe that this floating ſubſtance has been erroneouſly deemed pumice.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY V.

ITS Caſcades and Caverns?

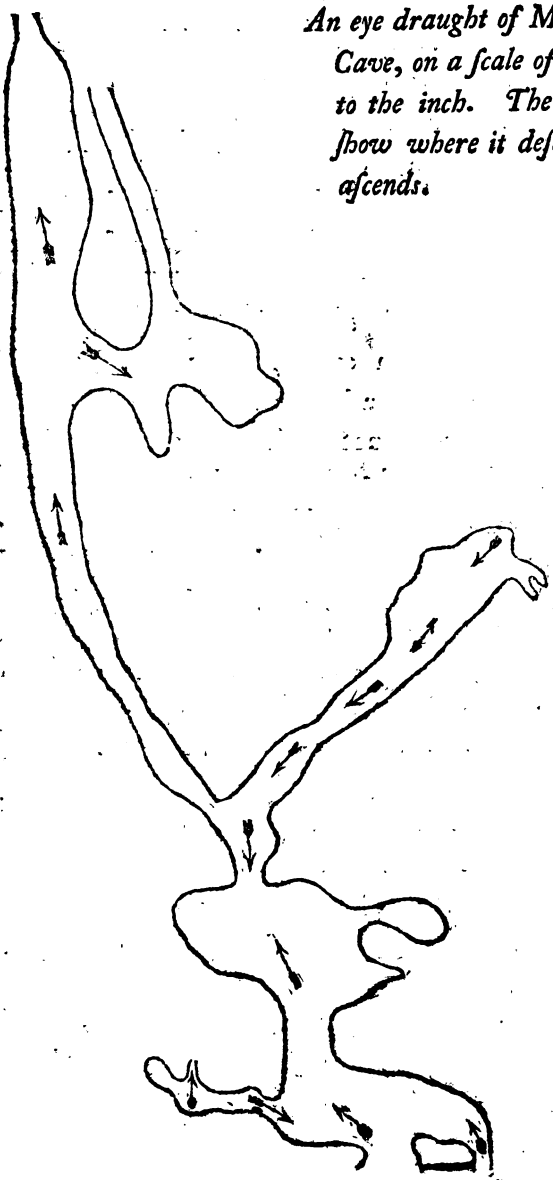
The only remarkable Caſcade in this country, is that of the Falling Spring in Auguſta. It is a water of James River, where it is called Jackſon's River, riſing in the warm ſpring mountains, about twenty miles ſouth weſt of the warm ſpring, and flowing into that valley. About three quarters of a mile from its ſource, it falls over a rock 200 feet into the valley below. The ſheet of water is broken in its breadth by the rock in two or three places, but not at all in its height. Between the ſheet and the rock, at the bottom, you may walk acroſs dry. This cataract will bear no compariſon with that of Niagara, as to the quantity of water compoſing it; the ſheet being only 12 or 15 feet wide above, and ſomewhat more ſpread below; but it is half as high again, the latter being only 156 feet, according to the menſuration made by order of M. Vaudreuil, Governor of Canada, and 130 according to a more recent account.

In the lime-ſtone country, there are many caverns of very conſiderable extent. The moſt noted is called Madiſon's Cave, and is on the north ſide of the Blue ridge, near the interſection of the Rockingham and Auguſta line with the ſouth fork of the ſouthern river of Shenandoah. It is in a hill of about 200 feet perpendicular

Digitized by Google

perpendicular height, the aſcent of which, on one ſide, is ſo ſteep, that you may pitch a biſcuit from its ſummit into the river which waſhes its baſe. The entrance of the cave is, in this ſide, about two thirds of the way up. It extends into the earth about 300 feet, branching into ſubordinate caverns, ſometimes aſcending a little, but more generally deſcending, and at length terminates, in two different places, at baſons of water of unknown extent, and which I ſhould judge to be nearly on a level with the water of the river; however, I do not think they are formed by refluent water from that, becauſe they are never turbid; becauſe they do not riſe and fall in correſpondence with that in times of flood, or of drought; and becauſe the water is always cool. It is probably one of the many reſervoirs with which the interior parts of the earth are ſuppoſed to abound, and which yield ſupplies to the fountains of water, diſtinguiſhed from others only by its being acceſſible. The vault of this cave is of ſolid lime-ſtone, from 20 to 40 or 50 feet high, through which water is continually percolating. This, trickling down the ſides of the cave, has incruſted them over in the form of elegant drapery; and dripping from the top of the vault generates on that, and on the baſe below, ſtalactites of a conical form, ſome of which have met, and formed maſſive columns.

Digitized by Google



An eye draught of Madiſon's Cave, on a ſcale of 50 feet to the inch. The arrows ſhow where it deſcends or aſcends.

Another

Digitized by Google

Another of these caves is near the North mountain, in the county of Frederick, on the lands of Mr. Zane. The entrance into this is on the top of an extensive ridge. You descend 30 or 40 feet, as into a well, from whence the cave then extends nearly horizontally, 400 feet into the earth, preserving a breadth of from 20 to 50 feet, and a height of from 5 to 12 feet. After entering this cave a few feet, the mercury, which in the open air was at 50°. rose to 57°. of Farenheit's thermometer, answering to 11°. of Reaumur's, and it continued at that to the remotest parts of the cave. The uniform temperature of the cellars of the observatory of Paris, which are 90 feet deep, and of all subterraneous cavities of any depth, where no chymical agents may be supposed to produce a factitious heat, has been found to be 10°. of Reaumur, equal to 54½°. of Farenheit. The temperature of the cave above mentioned so nearly corresponds with this, that the difference may be ascribed to a difference of instruments.

At the Panther gap, in the ridge which divides the waters of the Cow and Calf pasture, is what is called the *Blowing cave*. It is in the side of a hill, is of about 100 feet diameter, and emits constantly a current of air, of such force, as to keep the weeds prostrate to the distance of twenty yards before it. This current is strongest in dry, frosty weather, and in long spells of rain weakest. regular inspirations and expirations of air, by caverns and fissures, have been probably enough accounted for, by supposing them combined

Digitized by Google with

with intermitting fountains; as they muſt of courſe inhale air while their reſervoirs are emptying themſelves, and again emit it while they are filling. But a conſtant iſſue of air, only varying in its force as the weather is dryer or damper, will require a new hypotheſis. There is another blowing cave in the Cumberland mountain, about a mile from where it croſſes the Carolina line. All we know of this is, that it is not conſtant, and that a fountain of water iſſues from it.

The *Natural Bridge*, the moſt ſublime of nature's works, though not comprehended under the preſent head, muſt not be pretermitted. It is on the aſcent of a hill, which ſeems to have been cloven through its length by ſome great convulſion. The fiſſure, juſt at the bridge, is, by ſome admeaſurements, 270 feet deep, by others only 205. It is about 45 feet wide at the bottom, and 90 feet at the top; this of courſe determines the length of the bridge, and its height from the water. Its breadth in the middle, is about 60 feet, but more at the ends, and the thickneſs of the maſs, at the ſummit of the arch, about 40 feet. A part of this thickneſs is conſtituted by a coat of earth, which gives growth to many large trees. The reſidue, with the hill on both ſides, is one ſolid rock of lime-ſtone. The arch approaches the ſemi-elliptical form; but the larger axis of the ellipſis, which would be the chord of the arch, is many times longer than the tranſverſe. Though the ſides of this bridge are, provided in ſome parts with a parapet of fixed rocks, yet few men have the

Digitized by Google

the resolution to walk to them, and look over into the abyss.—You involuntarily fall upon your hands and feet, creep to the parapet, and peep over it. Looking down from this height about a minute, gave me a violent head-ache. If the view from the top be painful and intolerable, that from below is delightful in an equal extreme. It is impossible for the emotions arising from the sublime, to be felt beyond what they are here: so beautiful an arch, so elevated, so light, and springing as it were up to heaven! the rapture of the spectator is really indescribable! The fissure continuing narrow, deep, and straight, for a considerable distance above and below the bridge, opens a short but very pleasing view of the north mountain on one side, and Blue ridge on the other, at the distance each of them of about five miles. This bridge is in the county of Rockbridge, to which it has given name, and affords a public and commodious passage over a valley, which cannot be crossed elsewhere for a considerable distance. The stream passing under it is called Cedar creek. It is a water of James River, and sufficient in the dryest seasons to turn a grist-mill, though its fountain is not more than two miles above.*

QUERY

* Don Ulloa mentions a break, similar to this, in the province of Angarez, in South America. It is from 16 to 22 feet wide, 11 feet deep, and of 1.3 miles continuance, English measure. Its breadth at top is not sensibly greater than at bottom. But the following fact is remarkable, and will furnish some light for conjecturing the probable origin of our natural bridge. 'Esta cava, ó cauce está cortada en peña viva con tanta preci-

Digitized by Google

QUERY VI.

A NOTICE of the mines and other ſubterraneous riches; its trees, plants, fruits, &c.

I knew a ſingle inſtance of gold found in this ſtate. It was interſperſed in ſmall ſpecks through a lump of ore, of about four pounds weight, which yielded ſeventeen pennyweight of gold, of extraordinary ductility. This ore was found on the north ſide of Rappahannoc,

ciſion, que las deſigualdades del un lado entrantes, correſponden á las del otro lado ſalientes, como ſi aquella altura ſe hubieſe abierto expreſamente, con ſus bueltas y fortuoſidades, para darle tranſito á los aguas por entre los dos murallones que la forman; ſiendo tal ſu igualdad, que ſi llegaſen á juntarſe ſe endentarian uno con otro ſin dexar hueco." Not. Amer. II. § 10. Don Ulloa inclines to the opinion, that this channel has been effected by the wearing of the water which runs through it, rather than that the mountain ſhould have been broken open by any convulſion of nature. But if it had been worn by the running of water, would not the rocks which form the ſides, have been worn plane? or if, meeting in ſome parts with veins of harder ſtone, the water had left prominences on the one ſide, would not the ſame cauſe have ſometimes, or perhaps generally, occaſioned prominences on the other ſide alſo? Yet Don Ulloa tells us, that on the other ſide there are always correſponding cavities, and that theſe tally with the prominences ſo perfectly, that, were the two ſides to come together, they would fit in all their indentures, without leaving any void. I think that this does not reſemble the effect of running water, but looks rather as if the two ſides had parted aſunder. The ſides of the break, over which is the natural bridge of Virginia, conſiſting of a veiny rock which yields to time, the correſpondence between the ſalient and re-entering inequalities, if it exiſted at all, has now diſappeared. This break has the advantage of the one deſcribed by Don Ulloa in its fineſt circumſtance; no portion, in that inſtance having held together, during the ſeparation of the other parts, to form a bridge over the abyſs.

Digitized by Google

hannoc, about four miles below the falls. I never heard of any other indication of gold in its neighborhood.

On the Great Kanhaway, oppoſite the mouth of Cripple creek, and about twenty five miles from our ſouthern boundary, in the county of Montgomery, are mines of lead. The metal is mixed, ſometimes with earth, and ſometimes with rock, which requires the force of gunpowder to open it; and is accompanied with a portion of ſilver, too ſmall to be worth ſeparation under any proceſs hitherto attempted there. The proportion yielded is from 50 to 80lb. of pure metal from 100lb. of waſhed ore. The moſt common is that of 60 to the 100lb. The veins are at ſometimes moſt flattering; at others they diſappear ſuddenly and totally. They enter the ſide of the hill, and proceed horizontally. Two of them are wrought at preſent by the public, the beſt of which is 100 yards under the hill. Theſe would employ about 50 laborers to advantage. We have not more than 30 generally, and theſe cultivate their own corn. They have produced 60 tons of lead in a year; but the general quantity is from 20 to 25 tons. The preſent furnace is a mile from the ore bank, and on the oppoſite ſide of the river. The ore is firſt waggoned to the river, a quarter of a mile, then laden on board of canoes, and carried acroſs the river, which is there about 200 yards wide, and then again taken into waggons and carried to the furnace. This mode was originally adopted,

adopted, that they might avail themſelves of a good ſituation on a creek, for a pounding mill: but it would be eaſy to have the furnace and pounding mill on the ſame ſide of the river, which would yield water, without any dam, by a canal of about half a mile in length. From the furnace the lead is tranſported 130 miles along a good road, leading through the peaks of Otter to Lynch's ferry, or Winſton's on James River, from whence it is carried by water about the ſame diſtance to Weſtham. This land carriage may be greatly ſhortened, by delivering the lead on James River above the Blue ridge, from whence a ton weight has been brought on two canoes. The Great Kanhaway has conſiderable falls in the neighborhood of the mines. About ſeven miles below are three falls, of three or four feet perpendicular each; and three miles above is a rapid of three miles continuance, which has been compared in its deſcent to the great falls of James River. It is the opinion, that they may be laid open for uſeful navigation, ſo as to reduce very much the portage between Kanhaway and James River.

A valuable lead mine is ſaid to have been lately diſcovered in Cumberland, below the mouth of Red River. The greateſt, however, known in the weſtern country, are on the Miſſiſippi, extending from the mouth of Rock River 150 miles upwards. Theſe are not wrought, the lead uſed in that country being from the banks on the Spaniſh ſide of the Miſſiſippi, oppoſite to Kaſkaſkia.

Digitized by Google A

A mine of copper was once opened in the county of Amherſt, on the north ſide of James River, and another in the oppoſite country, on the ſouth ſide. However, either from bad management or the poverty of the veins, they were diſcontinued. We are told of a rich mine of native copper on the Ouhache, below the upper Wiaw.

The mines of iron worked at preſent are Callaway's, Roſs's, and Ballendine's, on the ſouth ſide of James River; Old's on the north ſide, in Albemarle; Miller's in Auguſta, and Zane's in Frederic. Theſe two laſt are in the valley between the Blue ridge and North mountain. Callaway's, Roſs's, Miller's, and Zane's, make about 150 tons of bar iron each, in the year. Roſs's makes alſo about 1600 tons of pig iron annually; Ballendine's 1000; Callaway's, Miller's, and Zane's, about 600 each. Beſides theſe, a forge of Mr. Hunter's, at Frederickſburg, makes about 300 tons a year of bar iron, from pigs imported from Maryland; and Taylor's forge on Neapſco of Patowmac, works in the ſame way, but to what extent I am not informed. The indications of iron in other places are numerous, and diſperſed through all the middle country. The toughneſs of the caſt iron of Roſs's and Zane's furnaces is very remarkable. Pots and other utenſils, caſt thinner than uſual, of this iron, may be ſafely thrown into, or out of the waggons in which they are tranſported. Salt-pans made of the ſame, and no longer wanted for that purpoſe, cannot be broken up, in

Digitized by Google

in order to be melted again, unleſs previouſly drilled in many parts.

In the weſtern country, we are told of iron mines between the Muſkinghum and Ohio; of others on Kentucky, between the Cumberland and Barren rivers, between Cumberland and Taniſſee, on Reedy creek, near the Long iſland, and on Cheſnut creek, a branch of the Great Kanhaway, near where it croſſes the Carolina line. What are called the iron banks, on the Miſſiſippi, are believed, by a good judge, to have no iron in them. In general, from what is hitherto known of that country, it ſeems to want iron.

Conſiderable quantities of black lead are taken occaſionally for uſe from Winterham, in the county of Amelia. I am not able, however, to give a particular ſtate of the mine. There is no work eſtabliſhed at it; thoſe who want, going and procuring it for themſelves.

The country on James River, from 15 to 20 miles above Richmond, and for ſeveral miles northward and ſouthward, is replete with mineral coal of a very excellent quality. Being in the hands of many proprietors, pitts have been opened, and, before the interruption of our commerce, were worked to an extent equal to the demand.

In the weſtern country coal is known to be in ſo many places, as to have induced an opinion, that the whole tract between the Laurel mountain, Miſſiſippi, and Ohio, yields coal. It is alſo known in many

places

Digitized by Google

places on the north ſide of the Ohio.—The coal at Pittſburgh is of very ſuperior quality. A bed of it at that place has been a-fire ſince the year 1765. Another coal hill on the Pike-run of the Monongahela has been a-fire ten years; yet it has burnt away about twenty yards only.

I have known one inſtance of an emerald found in this country. Amethyſts have been frequent, and cryſtals common; yet not in ſuch numbers any of them as to be worth ſeeking.

There is very good marble, and in very great abundance, on James River, at the mouth of Rockfiſh. The ſamples I have ſeen, were ſome of them of a white as pure as one might expect to find on the ſurface of the earth: but moſt of them were variegated with red, blue, and purple. None of it has been ever worked. It forms a very large precipice, which hangs over a navigable part of the river. It is ſaid there is marble at Kentucky.

But one vein of lime-ſtone is known below the Blue ridge. Its firſt appearance, in our country, is in Prince William, two miles below the pig-nut ridge of mountains; thence it paſſes on nearly parallel with that, and croſſes the Rivanna about five miles below it, where it is called the South-Weſt ridge. It then croſſes Hard-ware, above the mouth of Hudſon's creek, James River at the mouth of Rockfiſh, at the marble quarry before ſpoken of, probably runs up the river to where it appears again at Roſs's iron-works, and ſo

Digitized by Google

passes off south-westwardly by Flat creek of Otter river. It is never more than one hundred yards wide. From the Blue ridge westwardly, the whole country seems to be founded on a rock of lime-stone, besides infinite quantities on the surface, both loose and fixed. This is cut into beds, which range, as the mountains and sea-coast do, from south-west to north-east, the lamina of each bed declining from the horizon towards a parallelism with the axis of the earth. Being struck with this observation, I made, with a quadrant, a great number of trials on the angles of their declination, and found them to vary from 22°. to 60°.; but averaging all my trials, the result was within one third of a degree of the elevation of the pole or latitude of the place, and much the greatest part of them taken separately were little different from that: by which it appears, that these lamina are in the main parallel with the axis of the earth. In some instances, indeed, I found them perpendicular, and even reclining the other way: but these were extremely rare, and always attended with signs of convulsion, or other circumstances of singularity, which admitted a possibility of removal from their original position. These trials were made between Madison's cave and the Patowmac. We hear of lime-stone on the Missisippi and Ohio, and in all the mountainous country between the eastern and western waters, not on the mountains themselves, but occupying the vallies between them.

Near the eastern foot of the North mountain are immense

Digitized by Google

immenſe bodies of *Schiſt*, containing impreſſions of ſhells in a variety of forms. I have received petrified ſhells of very different kinds from the firſt ſources of the Kentucky, which bear no reſemblance to any I have ever ſeen on the tide-waters. It is ſaid that ſhells are found in the Andes, in South-America, fifteen thouſand feet above the level of the ocean. This is conſidered by many, both of the learned and unlearned, as a proof of an univerſal deluge. To the many conſiderations oppoſing this opinion, the following may be added. The atmoſphere, and all its contents, whether of water, air, or other matters, gravitate to the earth; that is to ſay, they have weight. Experience tells us, that the weight of all theſe together never exceeds that of a column of mercury of 31 inches height, which is equal to one of rain water of 35 feet high. If the whole contents of the atmoſphere then were water, inſtead of what they are, it would cover the globe but 35 feet deep; but as theſe waters, as they fell, would run into the ſeas, the ſuperficial meaſure of which is to that of the dry parts of the globe, as two to one, the ſeas would be raiſed only 52½ feet above their preſent level, and of courſe would overflow the lands to that height only. In Virginia this would be a very ſmall proportion even of the champaign country, the banks of our tide-waters being frequently, if not generally of a greater height. Deluges beyond this extent then, as for inſtance, to the North mountain or to Kentucky, ſeem out of the laws

Digitized by Google

laws of nature. But within it they may have taken place to a greater or leſs degree, in proportion to the combination of natural cauſes which may be ſuppoſed to have produced them. Hiſtory renders probable ſome inſtances of a partial deluge in the country lying round the Mediterranean ſea. It has been often* ſuppoſed, and is not unlikely, that that ſea was once a lake. While ſuch, let us admit an extraordinary collection of the waters of the atmoſphere from the other parts of the globe to have been diſcharged over that and the countries whoſe waters run into it. Or without ſuppoſing it a lake, admit ſuch an extraordinary collection of the waters of the atmoſphere, and an influx of waters from the Atlantic ocean, forced by long continued weſtern winds. The lake, or that ſea, may thus have been ſo raiſed as to overflow the low lands adjacent to it, as thoſe of Egypt and Armenia, which, according to a tradition of the Egyptians and Hebrews, were overflowed about 2300 years before the Chriſtian æra; thoſe of Attica, ſaid to have been overflowed in the time of Ogyges, about five hundred years later; and thoſe of Theſſala, in the time of Deucalian, ſtill 300 years poſterior. But ſuch deluges as theſe will not account for the ſhells found in the higher lands. A ſecond opinion has been entertained, which is, that in times anterior to the records either of hiſtory or tradition, the bed of the ocean, the principal reſidence of the ſhelled tribe, has, by ſome

* 2. Buffon Epoques, 96.

Digitized by Google

ſome great convulſion of nature been heaved to the heights at which we now find ſhells and other remains of marine animals. The favorers of this opinion do well to ſuppoſe the great events on which it reſts to have taken place beyond all the æras of hiſtory; for within theſe, certainly none ſuch are to be found; and we may venture to ſay further, that no fact has taken place, either in our own days, or in the thouſands of years recorded in hiſtory, which proves the exiſtence of any natural agents, within or without the bowels of the earth, of force ſufficient to heave, to the height of 15,000 feet, ſuch maſſes as the Andes. The difference between the power neceſſary to produce ſuch an effect, and that which ſhuffled together the different parts of Calabria in our days, is ſo immenſe, that, from the exiſtence of the latter we are not authoriſed to infer that of the former.

M. de Voltaire has ſuggeſted a third ſolution of this difficulty (Queſt. Encycl. Coquilles.) He cites an inſtance in Touraine, where, in the ſpace of 80 years, a particular ſpot of earth had been twice metamorphoſed into ſoft ſtone, which had become hard when employed in building. In this ſtone ſhells of various kinds were produced, diſcoverable at firſt only with the microſcope, but afterwards growing with the ſtone. From this fact, I ſuppoſe, he would have us infer, that, beſides the uſual proceſs for generating ſhells by the elaboration of earth and water in animal veſſels, nature may have provided an equivalent operation, by

paſſing

Digitized by Google

paſſing the ſame materials through the pores of calcareous earths and ſtones: as we ſee calcareous drop-ſtones generating every day by the percolation of water through lime-ſtone, and new marble forming in the quarries from which the old has been taken out; and it might be aſked, whether it is more difficult for nature to ſhoot the calcareous juice into the form of a ſhell, than other juices into the forms of cryſtals, plants, animals, according to the conſtruction of the veſſels through which they paſs? There is a wonder ſomewhere. Is it greateſt on this branch of dilemma; on that which ſuppoſes the exiſtence of a power, of which we have no evidence in any other caſe; or on the firſt, which requires us to believe the creation of a body of water and its ſubſequent annihilation? The eſtabliſhment of the inſtance, cited by M. de Voltaire, of the growth of ſhells unattached to animal bodies, would have been that of his theory. But he has not eſtabliſhed it. He has not even left it on ground ſo reſpectable as to have rendered it an object of enquiry to the literati of his own country. Abandoning this fact, therefore, the three hypotheſes are equally unſatisfactory; and we muſt be contented to acknowledge, that this great phenomenon is as yet unſolved. Ignorance is preferable to error; and he is leſs remote from the truth who believes nothing, than he who believes what is wrong.

There is great abundance (more eſpecially when you approach the mountains) of ſtone, white, blue, brown,

Digitized by Google

brown, &c. fit for the chiſſel, good mill-ſtone, ſuch alſo as ſtands the fire, and ſlate-ſtone. We are told of flint, fit for gun-flints, on the Meherin in Brunſwick, on the Miſſiſippi between the mouth of the Ohio and Kaſkaſkia, and on others of the weſtern waters. Iſinglaſs or mica is in ſeveral places; loadſtone alſo; and an Aſbeſtos of a ligneous texture is ſometimes to be met with.

Marle abounds generally. A clay, of which, like the Sturbridge in England, bricks are made, which will reſiſt long and violent action of fire, has been found on Tuckahoe creek of James River, and no doubt will be found in other places. Chalk is ſaid to be in Botetourt and Bedford. In the latter county is ſome earth believed to be gypſeous. Ochres are found in various parts.

In the lime-ſtone country are many caves, the earthy floors of which are impregnated with nitre. On Rich creek, a branch of the great Kanhaway, about 60 miles below the lead mines, is a very large one, about 20 yards wide, and entering a hill a quarter or half a mile. The vault is of rock, from 9 to 15 or 20 feet above the floor. A Mr. Lynch, who gives me this account, undertook to extract the nitre. Beſides a coat of the ſalt which had formed on the vault and floor, he found the earth highly impregnated to the depth of ſeven feet in ſome places, and generally of three, every buſhel yielding on an average three pounds of nitre. Mr. Lynch having made about 1000lb. of the

Digitized by Google

the ſalt from it, conſigned it to ſome others, who have ſince made 10,000lb. They have done this by purſuing the cave into the hill, never trying a ſecond time the earth they have once exhauſted, to ſee how far or ſoon it receives another impregnation. At leaſt fifty of theſe caves are worked on the Greenbriar. There are many of them known on Cumberland river.

The country weſtward of the Alleghaney abounds with ſprings of common ſalt. The moſt remarkable we have heard of are at Bullet's lick, the Big bones, the Blue licks, and on the North fork of Holſton. The area of Bullet's lick, is of many acres. Digging the earth to the depth of three feet, the water begins to boil up, and the deeper you go, and the drier the weather, the ſtronger is the brine.

A thouſand gallons of water, yield from a buſhel to a buſhel and a half of ſalt, which is about 80lb. of water to 1lb. of ſalt; but of ſea-water 25lb. yield 1lb. of ſalt. So that ſea-water is more than three times as ſtrong as that of theſe ſprings. A ſalt ſpring has been lately diſcovered at the Turkey foot on Yohoghany, by which river it is overflowed, except at very low water. Its merit is not yet known. Dunning's lick is alſo as yet untried, but it is ſuppoſed to be the beſt on this ſide of the Ohio. The ſalt ſprings on the margin of the Onondago lake are ſaid to give a ſaline taſte to the waters of the lake.

There are ſeveral medicinal ſprings, ſome of which are indubitably efficacious, while others ſeem to owe their

Digitized by Google

their reputation as much to fancy and change of air and regimen, as to their real virtues. None of them having undergone a chemical analyſis in ſkilful hands, nor been ſo far the ſubject of obſervations as to have produced a reduction into claſſes of the diſorders which they relieve, it is in my power to give little more than an enumeration of them.

The moſt efficacious of theſe are two ſprings in Auguſta, near the firſt ſources of James River, where it is called Jackſon's River. They riſe near the foot of the ridge of mountains generally called the Warm ſpring mountains, but in the maps Jackſon's mountains. The one is diſtinguiſhed by the name of the Warm ſpring, and the other of the Hot ſpring. The Warm ſpring iſſues with a very bold ſtream, ſufficient to work a griſt mill, and to keep the waters of its baſon, which is 30 feet in diameter, at the vital warmth, viz. 96°. of Farenheit's thermometer. The matter with which theſe waters is allied is very volatile; its ſmell indicates it to be ſulphureous, as alſo does the circumſtance of its turning ſilver black. They relieve rheumatiſms. Other complaints alſo of very different natures have been removed or leſſened by them. It rains here four or five days in every week.

The *Hot ſpring* is about ſix miles from the Warm, is much ſmaller, and has been ſo hot as to have boiled an egg. Some believe its degree of heat to be leſſened. It raiſes the mercury in Farenheit's thermometer to 112 degrees, which is fever heat. It ſome-

Digitized by Google

times relieves where the Warm ſpring fails. A fountain of common water, iſſuing within a few inches of its margin, gives it a ſingular appearance. Comparing the temperature of theſe with that of the Hot ſprings of Kamſchatka, of which Krachininnikow gives an account, the difference is very great, the latter raiſing the mercury to 200°. which is within 12°. of boiling water. Theſe ſprings are very much reſorted to in ſpite of a total want of accommodation for the ſick. Their waters are ſtrongeſt in the hotteſt months, which occaſions their being viſited in July and Auguſt principally.

The ſweet ſprings are in the county of Botetourt, at the eaſtern foot of the Alleghaney, about 42 miles from the Warm ſprings. They are ſtill leſs known. Having been found to relieve caſes in which the others had been ineffectually tried, it is probable their compoſition is different. They are different alſo in their temperature, being as cold as common water: which is not mentioned, however, as a proof of a diſtinct impregnation. This is among the firſt ſources of James River.

On Patowmac River, in Berkely county, above the North mountain, are medicinal ſprings, much more frequented than thoſe of Auguſta. Their powers, however, are leſs, the waters weakly mineralized, and ſcarcely warm. They are more viſited, becauſe ſituated in a fertile, plentiful, and populous country, better provided with accommodations, always ſafe from

Digitized by Google

from the Indians, and neareſt to the more populous ſtates.

In Louiſa county, on the head waters of the South Anna branch of York River, are ſprings of ſome medicinal virtue. They are not much uſed however. There is a weak chalybeate at Richmond; and many others in various parts of the country, which are of too little worth, or too little note, to be enumerated after thoſe before mentioned.

We are told of a ſulphur ſpring on Howard's creek of Greenbriar, and another at Boonſborough on Kentucky.

In the low grounds of the Great Kanhaway, ſeven miles above the mouth of Elk River, and 67 above that of the Kanhaway itſelf, is a hole in the earth of the capacity of 30 or 40 gallons, from which iſſues conſtantly a bituminous vapor, in ſo ſtrong a current, as to give to the ſand about its orifice the motion which it has in a boiling ſpring. On preſenting a lighted candle or torch within 18 inches of the hole, it flames up in a column of 18 inches diameter, and four or five feet height, which ſometimes burns out within 20 minutes, and at other times has been known to continue three days, and then has been ſtill left burning. The flame is unſteady, of the denſity of that of burning ſpirits, and ſmells like burning pit-coal. Water ſometimes collects in the baſon, which is remarkably cold, and is kept in ebullition by the vapor iſſuing through it. If the vapor be fired in that ſtate, the water ſoon becomes

Digitized by Google

comes ſo warm that the hand cannot bear it, and evaporates wholly in a ſhort time. This with the circumjacent lands, is the property of his excellency general Waſhington and of general Lewis.

There is a ſimilar one on Sandy River, the flame of which is a column of about 12 inches diameter, and three feet high. General Clarke, who informs me of it, kindled the vapor, ſtaid about an hour, and left it burning.

The mention of uncommon ſprings leads me to that of Syphon fountains. There is one of theſe near the interſection of the lord Fairfax's boundary with the North mountain, not far from Brock's gap, on the ſtream of which is a griſt-mill, which grinds two buſhels of grain at every flood of the ſpring: another, near the Cow-paſture River, a mile and a half below its confluence with the Bull-paſture River, and 16 or 17 miles from the Hot ſprings, which intermits once in every 12 hours: one alſo near the mouth of the North Holſton.

After theſe may be mentioned the *Natural Well*, on the lands of Mr. Lewis in Frederic county. It is ſomewhat larger than a common well: the water riſes in it as near the ſurface of the earth as in the neighboring artificial wells, and is of a depth as yet unknown. It is ſaid there is a current in it tending ſenſibly downwards. If this be true, it probably feeds ſome fountain, of which it is the natural reſervoir, diſtinguiſhed from others, like that of Madiſon's cave, by being acceſſible. It is uſed with a bucket and a windlaſs as an ordinary well.

A

Digitized by Google

A complete catalogue of the trees, plants, fruits, &c. is probably not desired. I will sketch out those which would principally attract notice, as being 1. Medicinal, 2. Esculent, 3. Ornamental, or 4. Useful for fabrication; adding the Linnæan to the popular names, as the latter might not convey precise information to a foreigner. I shall confine myself too to native plants.

1. Senna. Cassia liguſtrina.
Arsmart. Polygonum Sagittatum.
Clivers, or goose-grass. Galium spurium.
Lobelia of several species.
Palma Christi. Ricinus.
(3) James-town weed. Datura Stramonium.
Mallow. Malva rotundifolia.
Syrian mallow. Hibiscus moschentos.
Hibiscus virginicus.
Indian mallow. Sida rhombifolia.
Sida abutilon.
Virginia Marshmallow. Napæa hermaphrodita.
Napæa dioica.
Indian physic. Spiria trifoliata.
Euphorbia Ipecacuanhæ.
Pleurisy root. Asclepias decumbens.
Virginia snake-root. Aristolochia serpentaria.
Black snake-root. Actæa racemosa.
Seneca rattlesnake-root. Polygala Senega.
Valerian. Valeriana locusta radiata.
Gentiana, Saponaria, Villosa and Centaurium.
Ginseng. Panax quinquefolium.

Angelica.

Digitized by Google

Angelica. Angelica ſylveſtris.
Caſſava. Jatropha urens.
2. Tuckahoe. Licoperdon tuber.
Jeruſalem artichoke. Helianthus tuberoſus.
Long potatoes. Convolvulas batatas.
Grannadillas. Maycocks. Maracocks. Paſſiflora incarnata.
Panic. Panicum of many ſpecies.
Indian millet. Holcus laxus.
Holcus ſtrioſus.
Wild oat. Zizania aquatica.
Wild pea. Dolichos of Clayton.
Lupine. Lupinus perennis.
Wild hop. Humulus lupulus.
Wild cherry. Prunus Virginiana.
Cherokee plumb. Prunus ſylveſtris fructu majori. } Clayton.
Wild plumb. Prunus ſylveſtris fructu minori. } Clayton.
Wild crab-apple. Pyrus caronaria.
Red Mulberry. Morus rubra.
Perſimmon. Dioſpiros Virginiana.
Sugar maple. Acer ſaccharinum.
Scaly bark hiccory. Juglans alba cortice ſquamoſo. Clayton.
Common hiccory. Juglans alba, fructu minore rencido. Clayton.
Paccan, or Illinois nut. Not deſcribed by Linnæus, Millar, or Clayton. Were I to venture to deſcribe this, ſpeaking

Digitized by Google

ſpeaking of the fruit from memory, and of the leaf from plants of two years growth, I ſhould ſpecify it as the Juglans alba, foliolis lanceolatis, acuminatis, ſerratis, tomentoſis, fructu minore, ovato, compreſſo, vix inſculpto, dulci, putamine tenerrimo. It grows on the Illinois, Wabaſh, Ohio, and Miſſiſippi. It is ſpoken of by Don Ulloa under the name of Pacanos, in his Noticias Americanas. Entret. 6.

Black walnut. Juglans nigra.

White walnut. Juglans alba.

Cheſnut. Fagus caſtanea.

Chinquapin. Fagus pumila.

Hazlenut. Corylus avellana.

Grapes. Vitus. Various kinds, though only three deſcribed by Clayton.

Scarlet Strawberries. Fragaria Virginiana of Millar.

Whortleberries. Vaccinium uliginoſum.

Wild gooſeberries. Ribes groſſularia.

Cranberries. Vaccinium oxycoccos.

Black raſpberries. Rubus occidentalis.

Blackberries. Rubus fruticoſus.

Dewberries. Rubus cæſius.

Cloudberries. Rubus Chamæmorus.

3. Plane-tree. Platanus occidentalis.

Poplar. Liriodendron tulipifera.
Populus heterophylla.

Black poplar. Populus nigra.

Aſpen. Populus tremula.

Linden, or Lime. Telia Americana.

Red

Digitized by Google

Red flowering maple. Acer rubrum.
Horſe-cheſnut, or buck's eye. Æſculus pavia.
Catalpa. Bignonia catalpa.
Umbrella. Magnolia tripetala.
Swamp laurel. Magnolia glauca.
Cucumber-tree. Magnolia acuminata.
Portugal bay. Laurus indica.
Red bay. Laurus borbonia.
Dwarf-roſe bay. Rhododendron maximum.
Laurel of the weſtern country. Qu. ſpecies?
Wild pimento. Laurus benzoin.
Saſſafras. Laurus ſaſſafras.
Locuſt. Robinia pſeudo-acacia.
Honey-locuſt. Gleditſia. r.
Dogwood. Cornus florida.
Fringe or ſnow-drop tree. Chionanthus Virginica.
Barberry. Berberus vulgaris.
Redbud, or Judas-tree. Cercis Cariadenſis.
Holly. Ilex aquifolium.
Cockſpur hawthorn. Cratægus coccinea.
Spindle-tree. Euonymus Europæus.
Evergreen ſpindle tree. Euonymus Americanus.
Itea Virginica.
Elder. Sambucus nigra.
Papaw. Annona triloba.
Candleberry myrtle. Myrica cerifera.
Dwarf-laurel. Kalmia angluſtifolia. } called ivy with us.
Kalmia latifolia. }
Ivy. Hedera quinquefolia.

Trumpet

Digitized by Google

Trumpet honeyſuckle. Lonicera ſempervirens.
Upright honeyſuckle. Azalea nudiflora.
Yellow jaſmine. Bignonia ſempervirens.
Calycanthus floridus.
American aloe. Agave Virginica.
Sumach. Rhus. Qu. ſpecies?
Poke. Phytolacca decandra.
Long moſs. Tillandſia Uſneoides.
4. Reed. Arundo phragmitis.
Virginia hemp. Acnida cannabina.
Flax. Linum Virginianum.
Black, or pitch pine. Pinus tæda.
White pine. Pinus ſtrobus.
Yellow pine. Pinus Virginica.
Spruce pine. Pinus foliis ſingularibus. Clayton.
Hemlock ſpruce fir. Pinus Canadenſis.
Arbor vitæ. Thuya occidentalis.
Juniper. Juniperus Virginica (called cedar with us.)
Cypreſs. Cupreſſus diſticha.
White cedar. Cupreſſus Thyoides.
Black oak. Quercus nigra.
White oak. Quercus alba.
Red oak. Quercus rubra.
Willow oak. Quercus phellos.
Cheſnut oak. Quercus prinus.
Black jack oak. Quercus aquatica. Clayton.
Ground oak. Quercus pumila. Clayton.
Live oak. Quercus Virginiana. Millar.
Black birch. Betula nigra.

Digitized by Google

White birch. Betula alba.
Beach. Fagus ſylvatica.
Aſh. Fraxinus Americana.
Fraxinus Novæ Angliæ. Millar.
Elm. Ulmus Americana.
Willow. Salix. Query ſpecies?
Sweet gum. Liquidambar ſtyraciflua.

The following were found in Virginia when firſt viſited by the Engliſh; but it is not ſaid whether of ſpontaneous growth, or by cultivation only. Moſt probably they were natives of more ſouthern climates, and handed along the continent from one nation to another of the ſavages.

Tobacco. Nicotiana.
Maize. Zea mays.
Round potatoes. Solanum tuberoſum.
Pumkins. Cucurbita pepo.
Clymings. Cucurbita verrucoſa.
Squaſhes. Cucurbita melopepo.

There is an infinitude of other plants and flowers, for an enumeration and ſcientific deſcription of which I muſt refer to the Flora Virginica of our great botaniſt, Dr. Clayton, publiſhed by Gronovius at Leyden, in 1762. This accurate obſerver was a native and reſident of this ſtate, paſſed a long life in exploring and deſcribing its plants, and is ſuppoſed to have enlarged the botanical catalogue as much as almoſt any man who has lived.

Beſides theſe plants, which are native, our *farms* produce

Digitized by Google

produce wheat, rye, barley, oats, buck wheat, broom corn, and Indian corn. The climate ſuits rice well enough, where the lands do. Tobacco, hemp, flax, and cotton, are ſtaple commodities. Indigo yields two cuttings. The ſilk-worm is a native, and the mulberry proper for its food, grows kindly.

We cultivate alſo potatoes, both the long and the round, turnips, carrots, parſnips, pumkins, and ground nuts (Arachis.) Our graſſes are lucerne, st. foin, burnet, timothy, ray and orchard graſs; red, white, and yellow clover; greenſward, blue graſs, and crab graſs.

The *gardens* yield muſk-melons, water-melons, tomatas, okra, pomegranates, figs, and the eſculent plants of Europe.

The *orchards* produce apples, pears, cherries, quinces, peaches, nectarines, apricots, almonds, and plumbs.

Our quadrupeds have been moſtly deſcribed by Linnæus and Monſ. de Buffon. Of theſe the Mammoth, or big buffalo, as called by the Indians, muſt certainly have been the largeſt. Their tradition is, that he was carnivorous, and ſtill exiſts in the northern parts of America. A delegation of warriors from the Delaware tribe having viſited the governor of Virginia, during the revolution, on matters of buſineſs, after theſe had been diſcuſſed and ſettled in council, the governor aſked them ſome queſtions relative to their country, and among others, what they knew or had heard of the animal, whoſe bones were found at the

Digitized by Google

the Saltlicks on the Ohio. Their chief ſpeaker immediately put himſelf into an attitude of oratory, and with a pomp ſuited to what he conceived the elevation of his ſubject, informed him that it was a tradition handed down from their fathers, 'That in ancient 'times a herd of theſe tremendous animals came to 'the big-bone licks, and began an univerſal deſtruc-'tion of the bear, deer, elks, buffaloes, and other an-'imals which had been created for the uſe of the In-'dians: that the Great Man above, looking down 'and ſeeing this, was ſo enraged, that he ſeized his 'lightning, deſcended on the earth, ſeated himſelf on 'a neighboring mountain, on a rock of which his ſeat 'and the print of his feet are ſtill to be ſeen, and hurl-'ed his bolts among them till the whole were ſlaugh-'tered, except the big bull, who preſenting his fore-'head to the ſhafts, ſhook them off as they fell; but 'miſſing one at length, it wounded him in the ſide; 'whereon, ſpringing round, he bounded over the Ohio, 'over the Wabaſh, the Illinois, and finally over the 'great lakes, where he is living at this day.' It is well known that on the Ohio, and in many parts of America further north, tuſks, grinders, and ſkeletons of unparalleled magnitude, are found in great numbers, ſome lying on the ſurface of the earth, and ſome a little below it. A Mr. Stanley, taken priſoner by the Indians near the mouth of the Taniſſee, relates, that, after being transferred through ſeveral tribes, from one to another, he was at length carried over the mountains weſt

Digitized by Google

weſt of the Miſſouri to a river which runs weſtwardly: that theſe bones abounded there; and that the natives deſcribed to him the animal to which they belonged as ſtill exiſting in the northern parts of their country; from which deſcription he judged it to be an elephant. Bones of the ſame kind have been lately found, ſome feet below the ſurface of the earth, in ſalines opened on the North Holſton, a branch of the Taniſſee, about the latitude of 36½°. north. From the accounts publiſhed in Europe, I ſuppoſe it to be decided, that theſe are of the ſame kind with thoſe found in Siberia. Inſtances are mentioned of like animal remains found in the more ſouthern climates of both hemiſpheres; but they are either ſo looſely mentioned as to leave a doubt of the fact, ſo inaccurately deſcribed as not to authorize the claſſing them with the great northern bones, or ſo rare as to found a ſuſpicion that they have been carried thither as curioſities from more northern regions. So that on the whole there ſeem to be no certain veſtiges of the exiſtence of this animal further ſouth than the ſalines laſt mentioned. It is remarkable that the tuſks and ſkeletons have been aſcribed by the naturaliſts of Europe to the elephant, while the grinders have been given to the hippopotamus, or river horſe. Yet it is acknowledged, that the tuſks and ſkeletons are much larger than thoſe of the elephant, and the grinders many times greater than thoſe of the hippopotamus, and eſſentially different in form.—Wherever theſe grinders are found, there alſo we find the

Digitized by Google

the tuſks and ſkeleton; but no ſkeleton of the hippopotamus nor grinders of the elephant. It will not be ſaid that the hippopotamus and the elephant came always to the ſame ſpot, the former to depoſit his grinders, and the latter his tuſks and ſkeleton. For what became of the parts not depoſited there? We muſt agree then that theſe remains belong to each other, that they are of one and the ſame animal, that this was not a hippopotamus, becauſe the hippopotamus had no tuſks nor ſuch a frame, and becauſe the grinders differ in their ſize as well as in the number and form of their points. That it was not an elephant, I think aſcertained by proofs equally deciſive. I will not avail myſelf of the authority of the celebrated * anatomiſt, who, from an examination of the form and ſtructure of the tuſks, has declared they were eſſentially different from thoſe of the elephant: becauſe another † anatomiſt, equally celebrated, has declared, on a like examination, that they are preciſely the ſame. Between two ſuch authorities I will ſuppoſe this circumſtance equivocal. But, 1. The ſkeleton of the mammoth (for ſo the incognitum has been called) beſpeaks an animal of five or ſix times the cubit volume of the elephant, as Monſ. de Buffon has admitted. 2. The grinders are five times as large, are ſquare, and the grinding ſurface ſtudded with four or five rows of blunt points: whereas thoſe of the elephant are broad and thin, and their grinding ſurface flat. 3. I have never heard an inſtance, and

* Hunter. † D'Aubenton.

Digitized by Google

and ſuppoſe there has been none, of the grinder of an elephant being found in America. 4. From the known temperature and conſtitution of the elephant, he could never have exiſted in thoſe regions where the remains of the mammoth have been found.—The elephant is a native only of the torrid zone and its vicinities: if, with the aſſiſtance of warm apartments and warm clothing, he has been preſerved in life in the temperate climates of Europe, it has only been for a ſmall portion of what would have been his natural period, and no inſtance of his multiplication in them has ever been known. But no bones of the mammoth, as I have before obſerved, have been ever found further ſouth than the ſalines of the Holſton, and they have been found as far north as the Arctic circle. Thoſe, therefore, who are of opinion that the elephant and mammoth are the ſame, muſt believe, 1. That the elephant known to us can exiſt and multiply in the frozen zone; or, 2. That an eternal fire may once have warmed thoſe regions, and ſince abandoned them, of which, however, the globe exhibits no unequivocal indications; or, 3. That the obliquity of the ecliptic, when theſe elephants lived, was ſo great as to include within the tropics all thoſe regions in which the bones are found: the tropics being, as is before obſerved, the natural limits of habitation for the elephant. But if it be admitted that this obliquity has really decreaſed, and we adopt the higheſt rate of decreaſe yet pretended, that is of one minute in a century,

Digitized by Google

tury, to transfer the northern tropic to the Arctic circle, would carry the existence of these supposed elephants 250,000 years back; a period far beyond our conception of the duration of animal bones left exposed to the open air, as these are in many instances. Besides, though these regions would then be supposed within the tropics, yet their winters would have been too severe for the sensibility of the elephant. They would have had too but one day and one night in the year, a circumstance to which we have no reason to suppose the nature of the elephant fitted. However, it has been demonstrated, that, if a variation of obliquity in the ecliptic takes place at all, it is vibratory, and never exceeds the limits of 9 degrees, which is not sufficient to bring these bones within the tropics.—One of these hypotheses, or some other equally voluntary and inadmissible to cautious philosophy, must be adopted to support the opinion that these are the bones of the elephant. For my own part, I find it easier to believe that an animal may have existed, resembling the elephant in his tusks, and general anatomy, while his nature was in other respects extremely different. From the 30th degree of south latitude to the 30th of north, are nearly the limits which nature has fixed for the existence and multiplication of the elephant known to us. Proceeding thence northwardly to 36½ degrees, we enter those assigned to the mammoth. The further we advance north, the more their vestiges multiply as far as the earth has been explored in

Digitized by Google

in that direction: and it is as probable as otherwise, that this progression continues to the pole itself, if land extends so far. The centre of the frozen zone then may be the acme of their vigor, as that of the torrid is of the elephant. Thus nature seems to have drawn a belt of separation between these two tremendous animals, whose breadth indeed is not precisely known, though at present we may suppose it about $6\frac{1}{2}$ degrees of latitude; to have assigned to the elephant the regions south of these confines, and those north to the mammoth, founding the constitution of the one in her extreme of heat, and that of the other in the extreme of cold. When the Creator has therefore separated their nature as far as the extent of the scale of animal life allowed to this planet would permit, it seems perverse to declare it the same, from a partial resemblance of their tusks and bones. But to whatever animal we ascribe these remains, it is certain such a one has existed in America, and that it has been the largest of all terrestrial beings. It should have sufficed to have rescued the earth it inhabited, and the atmosphere it breathed, from the imputation of impotence in the conception and nourishment of animal life on a large scale; to have stifled, in its birth, the opinion of a writer, the most learned too of all others in the science of animal history, that in the new world, 'La nature 'vivante est beaucoup moins agissante, beaucoup 'moins forte:'* that nature is less active, less energet-

* Buffon, xviii. 122 edit. Paris, 1764.

Digitized by Google

ic on one ſide of the globe than ſhe is on the other. As if both ſides were not warmed by the ſame genial ſun; as if a ſoil of the ſame chemical compoſition, was leſs capable of elaboration into animal nutriment; as if the fruits and grains from that ſoil and ſun, yielded leſs rich chyle, gave a leſs extenſion to the ſolids and fluids of the body, or produced ſooner in the cartilages, membranes, and fibres, that rigidity which reſtrains all further extenſion, and terminates animal growth. The truth is, that a pigmy and a Patagonian, a mouſe and a mammoth, derive their dimenſions from the ſame nutritive juices. The difference of increment depends on circumſtances unſearchable to beings with our capacities. Every race of animals ſeems to have received from their Maker certain laws of extenſion at the time of their formation. Their elaborative organs were formed to produce this, while proper obſtacles were oppoſed to its further progreſs. Below theſe limits they cannot fall, nor riſe above them. What intermediate ſtation they ſhall take may depend on ſoil, on climate, on food, on a careful choice of breeders. But all the manna of heaven would never raiſe the mouſe to the bulk of the mammoth.

The opinion advanced by the Count de Buffon*, is, 1. That the animals common to both the old and the new world, are ſmaller in the latter. 2. That thoſe peculiar to the new are on a ſmaller ſcale. 3. That thoſe which have been domeſticated in both have

* xviii. 100–156.

Digitized by Google

have degenerated in America: and 4. That on the whole it exhibits fewer ſpecies. And the reaſon he thinks is, that the heats of America are leſs; that more waters are ſpread over its ſurface by nature, and fewer of theſe drained off by the hand of man. In other words, that *heat* is friendly, and *moiſture* adverſe to the production and developement of large quadrupeds. I will not meet this hypotheſis on its firſt doubtful ground, whether the climate of America be comparatively more humid? Becauſe we are not furniſhed with obſervations ſufficient to decide this queſtion. And though, till it be decided, we are as free to deny, as others are to affirm the fact, yet for a moment let it be ſuppoſed. The hypotheſis, after this ſuppoſition, proceeds to another; that *moiſture* is unfriendly to animal growth. The truth of this is inſcrutable to us by reaſonings à priori. Nature has hidden from us her modus agendi. Our only appeal on ſuch queſtions is to experience; and I think that experience is againſt the ſuppoſition. It is by the aſſiſtance of *heat* and *moiſture* that vegetables are elaborated from the elements of earth, air, water, and fire. We accordingly ſee the more humid climates produce the greater quantity of vegetables. Vegetables are mediately or immediately the food of every animal; and in proportion to the quantity of food, we ſee animals not only multiplied in their numbers, but improved in their bulk, as far as the laws of their nature will admit. Of this opinion is the Count de Buffon himſelf

in

Digitized by Google

in another part of his work:* "en general, il paroit "ques les pays un peu *froids* conviennent mieux á nos "boeufs que les pays chauds, et qu'ils ſont d'autant "plus groſs et plus grands que le climat eſt plus *humide* et plus abondans en paturages. Les boeufs de "Danemarck, de la Podolie, de l'Ukraine, et de la "Tartaire que habitent les Calmouques ſont les plus "grands de tous." Here then a race of animals, and one of the largeſt too, has been increaſed in its dimenſions by *cold* and *moiſture*, in direct oppoſition to the hypotheſis, which ſuppoſes that theſe two circumſtances diminiſh animal bulk, and that it is their contraries, *heat* and *dryneſs* which enlarge it. But when we appeal to experience, we are not to reſt ſatisfied with a ſingle fact. Let us therefore try our queſtion on more general ground. Let us take two portions of the earth, Europe and America for inſtance, ſufficiently extenſive to give operation to general cauſes; let us conſider the circumſtances peculiar to each, and obſerve their effect on animal nature. America running through the torrid as well as temperate zone, has more *heat* collectively taken, than Europe. But Europe according to our hypotheſis, is the *dryeſt*. They are equally adapted then to animal productions; each being endowed with one of thoſe cauſes which befriend animal growth, and with one which oppoſes it. If it be thought unequal to compare Europe with America, which is ſo much larger, I anſwer, not more ſo

* viii. 134.

Digitized by Google

ſo than to compare America with the whole world. Beſides, the purpoſe of the compariſon is to try an hypotheſis, which makes the ſize of animals depend on the *heat* and *moiſture* of climate. If therefore we take a region, ſo extenſive as to comprehend a ſenſible diſtinction of climate, and ſo extenſive too as that local accidents, or the intercourſe of animals on its borders, may not materially affect the ſize of thoſe in its interior parts, we ſhall comply with thoſe conditions which the hypotheſis may reaſonably demand. The objection would be the weaker in the preſent caſe, becauſe any intercourſe of animals which may take place on the confines of Europe and Aſia, is to the advantage of the former, Aſia producing certainly larger animals than Europe. Let us then take a comparative view of the quadrupeds of Europe and America, preſenting them to the eye in three different tables, in one of which ſhall be enumerated thoſe found in both countries; in a ſecond, thoſe found in one only; in a third, thoſe which have been domeſticated in both. To facilitate the compariſon, let thoſe of each table be arranged in gradation according to their ſizes, from the greateſt to the ſmalleſt, ſo far as their ſizes can be conjectured. The weights of the large animals ſhall be expreſſed in the Engliſh avoirdupoiſe pound and its decimals; thoſe of the ſmaller, in the ſame ounce and its decimals. Thoſe which are marked thus*, are actual weights of particular ſubjects, deemed among the largeſt of their ſpecies. Thoſe marked thus†, are

furniſhed

Digitized by Google

furniſhed by judicious perſons well acquainted with the ſpecies, and ſaying from conjecture only, what the largeſt individual they had ſeen would probably have weighed. The other weights are taken from Meſſrs. Buffon and D'Aubenton, and are of ſuch ſubjects as came caſually to their hands for diſſection. This circumſtance muſt be remembered where their weights and mine ſtand oppoſed: the latter being ſtated, not to produce a concluſion in favor of the American ſpecies, but to juſtify a ſuſpenſion of opinion until we are better informed, and a ſuſpicion, in the mean time, that there is no uniform difference in favor of either: which is all I pretend.

Digitized by Google

A comparative View of the Quadrupeds of Europe and of America.

I. *Aboriginals of both.*

	Europe.	America.
	lb.	lb.
Mammoth		
Buffalo. Biſon		*1800
White bear. Ours blanc.		
Carribou. Renne.		
Bear. Ours.	153.7	*410
Elk. Elam. Original palmated		
Red deer. Cerf.	288.8	*273
Fallow deer. Diam.	167.8	
Wolf. Loup	69.8	
Roe. Chevreuil	56.7	
Glutton. Glouton. Carcajou.		
Wild cat. Chat ſauvage		†30
Lynx. Loup cervier	25.	
Beaver. Caſtor	18.5	*45
Badger. Blaireau	13.6	
Red fox. Rennard	13.5	
Grey fox. Iſatis.		
Otter. Loutre	8.9	†12
Monax. Marmotte	6.5	
Viſon. Fouine	2.8	
Hedgehog. Herriſſon	2.2	
Marten. Marte	1.9	†6
	oz.	
Water rat. Rat d'eau	7.5	
Weaſel. Belette	2.2	oz.
Flying ſquirrel. Polatouche	2.2	†4
Shrew mouſe. Muſaraigne.	1.	

Aboriginals

Digitized by Google

II. *Aboriginals of one only.*

EUROPE.	lb.	AMERICA.	lb.
Sanglier. Wild boar	280.	Tapir	534.
Mouflon. Wild sheep	56.	Elk, round horned	†450.
Bouquetin. Wild goat		Puma	
Lievre. Hare	7.6	Jugar	218.
Lapin. Rabbit	3.4	Cabiai	109.
Putois. Polecat	3.3	Tamanoire	109.
Genette	3.1	Tammandua	65.
Desman. Muskrat	oz.	Cougar of N. America	75.4
Ecureuil. Squirrel	12.	Cougar of S. America	59.
Hermine. Ermin	8.2	Ocelot	
Rat. Rat.	7.5	Pecari	46.3
Loirs.	3.1	Jaguaret	43.6
Lerot. Dormouse	1.8	Alco	
Taupe. Mole.	1.2	Lama	
Hamster.	.9	Paco	
Ziesel.		Paca	31.7
Leming.		Serval	
Souris. Mouse	.6	Sloth. Unau	27.25
		Saricovienne	
		Kinkajou	
		Tatou Kabassou	21.8
		Urson. Urchin	
		Raccoon. Raton	16.5
		Coati	
		Coendou	16.3
		Sloth. Ai	13.
		Sapajou Ouarini	
		Sapajou Coaita	9.8
		Tatou Encubert	
		Tatou Apar	
		Tatou Cachica	7.
		Little Coendou	6.5
		Opossum. Sarigue	

II. TABLE

Digitized by Google

II. TABLE continued.

EUROPE.	AMERICA.	
		lb.
	Tapeti	
	Margay	
	Carbier	
	Agouti	4.2
	Sapajou Saï	3.5
	Tatou Cirquinçon	
	Tatou Tatouate	3.3
	Mouſette Squaſh	
	Mouſette Chinche	
	Mouſette Conepate	
	Scunk	
	Mouſette. Zorilla	
	Whabus. Hare. Rabbit	
	Aperea	
	Akouchi	
	Odatra. Muſkrat	
	Pilori	
	Great grey ſquirrel	†2.7
	Fox ſquirrel of Virginia	†2.625
	Surikate	2.
	Mink	†2.
	Sapajou. Sajou	1.8
	Indian pig. Cochond' Inde	1.6
	Sapajou Saïmiri	1.5
	Phlanger	
	Coquallin	
	Leſſer grey ſquirrel	†1.5
	Black ſquirrel	†1.5
	Red ſquirrel	10.oz.
	Sagoin Saki.	

Digitized by Google

II. TABLE continued.

EUROPE.	AMERICA.	
	Sagoin Pinche	
	Sagoin Tamarin	oz.
	Sagoin Quiſtiti	4-4
	Sagoin Marakine	
	Sagoin Mico	
	Cayopollin	
	Fourmilier	
	Marmoſe	
	Sarigue of Cayenne	
	Tucan	
	Red mole	oz.
	Ground ſquirrel	4.

III. *Domeſticated in both.*

	Europe.	America.
	lb.	lb.
Cow	765.	*2500
Horſe		*1366
Aſs		
Hog		*1200
Sheep		*125
Goat		*80
Dog	67.6	
Cat	7.	

Digitized by Google

I have not inſerted in the firſt table the phoca* nor leather-winged bat, becauſe the one living half the year in the water, and the other being a winged animal, the individuals of each ſpecies may viſit both continents.

Of the animals in the 1ſt table, Monſ. de Buffon himſelf informs us, [XXVII. 130. XXX. 213.] that the beaver, the otter, and ſhrew mouſe, though of the ſame ſpecies, are larger in America than Europe. This ſhould therefore have corrected the generality of his expreſſions XVIII. 145. and elſewhere, that the animals common to the two countries, are conſiderably leſs in America than in Europe, 'and cela ſans aucune exception.' He tells us too, [Quadrup. VIII. 334. edit. Paris, 1777] that on examining a bear from America, he remarked no difference, 'dans *la forme* de cet ours d'Amerique comparé a celui d'Europe;' but adds from Bartram's journal, that an American bear weighed 400lb. Engliſh, equal to 367lb. French: whereas we find the European bear examined by Monſ. D'Aubenton, [XVII. 82.] weighed but 141lb. French. That the palmated elk is larger in America than Europe we are informed by Kalm,† a naturaliſt who viſited the former by public appointment,

* It is ſaid, that this animal is ſeldom ſeen above 30 miles from ſhore, or beyond the 56th degree of latitude. The interjacent iſlands between Aſia and America admit his paſſing from one continent to the other without exceeding theſe bounds. And in fact, travellers tell us that theſe iſlands are places of principal reſort for them, and eſpecially in the ſeaſon of bringing forth their young.

† 1. 233. Lon. 1772.

Digitized by Google

appointment, for the expreſs purpoſe of examining the ſubjects of natural hiſtory. In this fact Pennant concurs with him. [Barrinton's Miſcellanies.] The ſame Kalm tells us* that the black mooſe, or renne of America is as high as a tall horſe; and Cateſby,† that it is about the bigneſs of a middle ſized ox. The ſame account of their ſize has been given me by many who have ſeen them. But Monſ. D'Aubenton ſays‡ that the renne of Europe is about the ſize of a red deer. The weazel is larger in America than in Europe, as may be ſeen by comparing its dimenſions as reported by Monſ. D'Aubenton§ and Kalm. The latter tells us,‖ that the lynx, badger, red fox, and flying ſquirrel, are the *ſame* in America as in Europe: by which expreſſion I underſtand, they are the ſame in all material circumſtances, in ſize as well as others: for if they were ſmaller, they would differ from the European. Our grey fox is, by Cateſby's account,¶ little different in ſize and ſhape from the European fox. I preſume he means the red fox of Europe, as does Kalm, where he ſays,** that in ſize 'they do not quite come up to our foxes.' For proceeding next to the red fox of America, he ſays, 'they are entirely the ſame with the European ſort:' which ſhows he had in view one European ſort only, which was the red. So that the reſult of their teſtimony is, that the American

* Ib. 233.
† I. xxvii.
‡ XXIV. 162.
§ XV. 42.
‖ I. 359. I. 48. 221. 251. II. 52.
¶ II. 78.
** I. 210.

Digitized by Google

American grey fox is ſomewhat leſs than the European red; which is equally true of the grey fox of Europe, as may be ſeen by comparing the meaſures of the Count de Buffon and Monſ. D'Aubenton.* The white bear of America is as large as that of Europe. The bones of the mammoth which have been found in America, are as lare as thoſe found in the old world. It may be aſked, why I inſert the mammoth, as if it ſtill exiſted? I aſk in return, why I ſhould omit it as if it did not exiſt? Such is the economy of nature, that no inſtance can be produced, of her having permitted any one race of her animals to become extinct; of her having formed any link in her great work ſo weak as to be broken. To add to this, the traditionary teſtimony of the Indians, that this animal ſtill exiſts in the northern and weſtern parts of America, would be adding the light of a taper to that of the meridian ſun. Thoſe parts ſtill remain in their aboriginal ſtate, unexplored and undiſturbed by us, or by others for us. He may as well exiſt there now, as he did formerly where we find his bones. If he be a carnivorous animal, as ſome anatomiſts have conjectured, and the Indians affirm, his early retirement may be accounted for from the general deſtruction of the wild game by the Indians, which commences in the firſt inſtant of their connection with us, for the purpoſe of purchaſing matchcoats, hatchets, and fire-locks, with their ſkins. There

*XXVII. 63. XIV. 119 Harris, II. 387. Buffon. Quad. IX. 1.

Digitized by Google

There remain then the buffaloe, red deer, fallow deer, wolf, roe, glutton, wild-cat, monax, viſion, hedgehog, marten, and water rat, of the comparative ſizes of which we have not ſufficient teſtimony. It does not appear that Meſſrs. de Buffon and D'Aubenton have meaſured, weighed, or ſeen thoſe of America. It is ſaid of ſome of them, by ſome travellers, that they are ſmaller than the European. But who were theſe travellers? Have they not been men of a very different deſcription from thoſe who have laid open to us the other three quarters of the world? Was natural hiſtory the object of their travels? Did they meaſure or weigh the animals they ſpeak of? or did they not judge of them by ſight, or perhaps even from report only? Were they acquainted with the animals of their own country, with which they undertake to compare them? Have they not been ſo ignorant as often to miſtake the ſpecies? A true anſwer to theſe queſtions would probably lighten their authority, ſo as to render it inſufficient for the foundation of an hypotheſis. How unripe we yet are, for an accurate compariſon of the animals of the two countries, will appear from the work of Monſieur de Buffon. The ideas we ſhould have formed of the ſizes of ſome animals, from the information he had received at his firſt publications concerning them, are very different from what his ſubſequent communications give us. And indeed his candor in this can never be too much praiſed. One ſentence of his book muſt do him immor-

tal

Digitized by Google

tal honor. 'J'aime autant une perſonne qui me relève d'une erreur, qu'une autre qui m'apprend une verité, parce qu'en effect une erreur corrigée eſt une verité.'* He ſeems to have thought the cabiai he firſt examined wanted little of its full growth. 'Il n'etoit pas encore tout-a-fait adulte.'† Yet he weighed but 46½ lb. and he found afterwards,‡ that theſe animals when full grown, weighed 100lb. He had ſuppoſed from the examination of a jaugar,‖ ſaid to be two years old, which weighed but 16lb. 12oz. that when he ſhould have acquired his full growth, he would not be larger than a middle ſized dog. But a ſubſequent account§ raiſes his weight to 200lb. Further information, will doubtleſs, produce further corrections. The wonder is, not that there is yet ſomething in this great work to correct, but that there is ſo little. The reſult of this view then is, that of 26 quadrupeds common to both countries, 7 are ſaid to be larger in America, 7 of equal ſize, and 12 not ſufficiently examined. So that the firſt table impeaches the firſt member of the aſſertion, that of the animals common to both countries, the American are ſmalleſt, 'et cela ſans aucune exception.' It ſhows it not juſt, in all the latitude in which its author has advanced it, and probably not to ſuch a degree as to found a diſtinction between the two countries.

Proceeding to the ſecond table, which arranges the animals

* Quad. IX. 158.
† XXV. 184.
‡ Quad. IX. 132.
‖ XIX. 2.
§ Quad. IX. 44.

Digitized by Google

animals found in one of the two countries only, Monſ. de Buffon obſerves, that the tapir, the elephant of America, is but of the ſize of a ſmall cow. To preſerve our compariſon, I will add, that the wild boar, the elephant of Europe, is little more than half that ſize. I have made an elk with round or cylindrical horns an animal of America, and peculiar to it; becauſe I have ſeen many of them myſelf, and more of their horns: and becauſe I can ſay, from the beſt information, that in Virginia, this kind of elk has abounded much, and ſtill exiſts in ſmaller numbers; and I could never learn that the palmated kind had been ſeen here at all. I ſuppoſe this confined to the more northern latitudes.* I have made our hare or rabbit

* The deſcription of Theodat, Denys and La Honton, cited by Monſ. de Buffon, under the article of Elan, authorize the ſuppoſition, that the flat-horned elk is found in the northern parts of America. It is not however extended to our latitudes. On the other hand, I could never learn that the round-horned elk has been ſeen further north than the Hudſon's River. This agrees with the former elk in its general character, being, like that, when compared with a deer, very much larger, its ears longer, broader, and thicker in proportion, its hair much longer, neck and tail ſhorter, having a dewlap before the breaſt (caruncula gutturalis Linnæi) a white ſpot often, if not always, of a foot diameter, on the hinder part of the buttocks round the tail; its gait a trot, and attended with a rattling of the hoofs: but diſtinguiſhed from that deciſively by its horns, which are not palmated, but round and pointed. This is the animal deſcribed by Cateſby as the Cervus major Americanus, the ſtag of America, le Cerf de l'Amerique. But it differs from the Cervus as totally, as does the palmated elk from dama. And in fact it ſeems to ſtand in the ſame relation to the elk, as the red deer does to the fallow. It has abounded in Virginia, has been ſeen within my knowledge on the eaſtern ſide of the Blue ridge ſince the year 1765, is now common beyond thoſe mountains, has been often brought to

Digitized by Google

rabbit peculiar, believing it to be different from both the European animals of thoſe denominations, and calling it therefore by its Algonquin name, whabus, to keep it diſtinct from theſe. Kalm is of the ſame opinion.* I have enumerated the ſquirrels according to our own knowledge, derived from daily ſight of them, becauſe I am not able to reconcile with that the European appellations and deſcriptions. I have heard of other ſpecies, but they have never come within my own notice. Theſe, I think, are the only inſtances in which I have departed from the authority of Monſ. de

L

to us and tamed, and its horns are in the hands of many. I ſhould deſignate it as the 'Alces Americanus cornibus teretibus.' It were to be wiſhed, that naturaliſts who are acquainted with the renne and elk of Europe, and who may hereafter viſit the northern parts of America, would examine well the animals called there by the names of the grey and black mooſe, caribou, original and elk. Monſ. de Buffon has done what could be done from the materials in his hands, toward clearing up the confuſion introduced by the looſe application of theſe names among the animals they are not meant to deſignate. He reduces the whole to the renne and flat-horned elk. From all the information I have been able to collect, I ſtrongly ſuſpect they will be found to cover three, if not four diſtinct ſpecies of animals. I have ſeen ſkins of a mooſe, and of the caribou: they differ more from each other, and from that of the round horned-elk, than I ever ſaw two ſkins differ which belonged to different individuals of any wild ſpecies. Theſe differences are in the color, length, and coarſeneſs of the hair, and in the ſize, texture, and marks of the ſkin. Perhaps it will be found that there is, 1. the mooſe, black and grey, the former being ſaid to be the male, and the latter the female. 2. The caribou, or renne. 3. The flat-horned elk, or original. 4. The round horned-elk. Should this laſt, though poſſeſſing ſo nearly the characters of the elk, be found to be the ſame with Cerf d'Ardennes or Brandhirtz of Germany, ſtill there will remain the three ſpecies firſt enumerated.

* Kalm II. 340. I. 82.

Digitized by Google

de Buffon in the conſtruction of this table, I take him for my ground work, becauſe I think him the beſt informed of any naturaliſt who has ever written. The reſult is, that there are 18 quadrupeds peculiar to Europe; more than four times as many, to wit, 74, peculiar to America; that the* firſt of theſe 74 weighs more than the whole column of Europeans: and conſequently this ſecond table diſproves the ſecond member of the aſſertion, that the animals peculiar to the new world are on a ſmaller ſcale, ſo far as that aſſertion relied on European animals for ſupport: and it is in full oppoſition to the theory which makes the animal volume to depend on the circumſtances of *heat* and *moiſture*.

The 3d table comprehends thoſe quadrupeds only which are domeſtic in both countries. That ſome of theſe, in ſome parts of America, have become leſs than their original ſtock, is doubtleſs true; and the reaſon is very obvious. In a thinly peopled country, the ſpontaneous productions of the foreſts and waſte fields are ſufficient to ſupport indifferently the domeſtic

* The tapir is the largeſt of the animals peculiar to America. I collect his weight thus. Monſ. de Buffon ſays, XXIII. 274, that he is of the ſize of a zebu, or a ſmall cow. He gives us the meaſures of a zebu, ib. 94, as taken by himſelf, viz. 5 feet 7 inches from the muzzle to the root of the tail, and 5 feet 1 inch circumference behind the fore legs. A bull, meaſuring in the ſame way 6 feet 9 inches and 5 feet 2 inches, weighed 600lb. VIII. 153. The zebu then, and of courſe the tapir, would weigh about 500lb. But one individual of every ſpecies of European peculiars would probably weigh leſs than 400lb. Theſe are French meaſures and weights.

Digitized by Google

the animals of the farmer, with a very little aid from him in the ſevereſt and ſcarceſt ſeaſon. He therefore finds it more convenient to receive them from the hand of nature in that indifferent ſtate, than to keep up their ſize by a care and nouriſhment which would coſt him much labor. If on this low fare, theſe animals dwindle, it is no more than they do in thoſe parts of Europe where the poverty of the ſoil, or poverty of the owner reduces them to the ſame ſcanty ſubſiſtence. It is the uniform effect of one and the ſame cauſe, whether acting on this or that ſide of the globe. It would be erring therefore againſt that rule of philoſophy, which teaches us to aſcribe like effects to like cauſes, ſhould we impute this diminution of ſize in America to any imbecility or want of uniformity in the operations of nature. It may be affirmed with truth, that, in thoſe countries, and with thoſe individuals of America, where neceſſity or curioſity has produced equal attention as in Europe, to the nouriſhment of animals, the horſes, cattle, ſheep and hogs of the one continent are as large as thoſe of the other. There are particular inſtances, well atteſted, where individuals of this country have imported good breeders from England, and have improved their ſize by care in the courſe of ſome years. To make a fair compariſon between the two countries, it will not anſwer to bring together animals of what might be deemed the middle or ordinary ſize of their ſpecies; becauſe an error in judging of that middle or ordinary ſize

Digitized by Google

ſize would vary the reſult of the compariſon. Thus Monſieur D'Aubenton* conſiders a horſe of 4 feet 5 inches high and 400lb. weight French, equal to 4 feet 8.6 inches and 436lb. Engliſh as a middle ſized horſe. Such a one is deemed a ſmall horſe in America. The extremes muſt therefore be reſorted to. The ſame anatomiſt† diſſected a horſe of 5 feet 9 inches height, French meaſure, equal to 6 feet 1.7 Engliſh. This is near 6 inches higher than any horſe I have ſeen: and could it be ſuppoſed that I had ſeen the largeſt horſes in America, the concluſion would be, that ours have diminiſhed, or that we have bred from a ſmaller ſtock. In Connecticut and Rhode-Iſland, where the climate is favorable to the production of graſs, bullocks have been ſlaughtered which weighed 2500, 2200, and 2100lb. nett; and thoſe of 1800lb. have been frequent. I have ſeen a hog‡ weigh 1050lb. after the blood, bowels, and hair had been taken from him. Before he was killed, an attempt was made to weigh him with a pair of ſteel-yards, graduated to 1200lb. but he weighed more. Yet this hog was probably not within fifty generations of the European ſtock. I am well informed of another which weighed 1100lb. groſs. Aſſes have been ſtill more neglected than any other domeſtic animal in America. They are neither fed nor houſed in the moſt rigorous ſeaſon of the year. Yet they are larger than thoſe meaſured by

* VII. 432.
† VII. 474.
‡ In Williamſburg, April, 1769.

Digitized by Google

by Monſ. D'Aubenton,* of 3 feet $7\frac{1}{4}$ inches, 3 feet 4 inches, and 3 feet $2\frac{1}{2}$ inches, the latter weighing only 215.8lb. Theſe ſizes I ſuppoſe have been produced by the ſame negligence in Europe which has produced a like diminution here. Where care has been taken of them on that ſide of the water, they have been raiſed to a ſize bordering on that of the horſe; not by the *heat* and *dryneſs* of the climate, but by good food and ſhelter. Goats have been alſo much neglected in America. Yet they are very prolific here, bearing twice or three times a year, and from one to five kids at a birth. Monſ. de Buffon has been ſenſible of a difference in this circumſtance in favor of America.† But what are their greateſt weights, I cannot ſay. A large ſheep here weighs 100lb. I obſerve Monſ. D'Aubenton calls a ram of 62lb. one of middle ſize.‡ But to ſay what are the extremes of growth in theſe and other domeſtic animals of America, would require information of which no one individual is poſſeſſed. The weights actually known and ſtated in the third table preceding will ſuffice to ſhow, that we may conclude, on probable grounds, that, with equal food and care, the climate of America will preſerve the races of domeſtic animals as large as the European ſtock from which they are derived; and conſequently that the third member of Monſ. de Buffon's aſſertion, that the domeſtic animals are ſubject to

* VIII. 48. 55. 66.
† XVIII. 96.
‡ IX. 41.

Digitized by Google

to degeneration from the climate of America, is as probably wrong as the firſt and ſecond were certainly ſo.

That the laſt part of it is erroneous, which affirms that the ſpecies of American quadrupeds are comparatively few, is evident from the tables taken together. By theſe it appears that there are an hundred ſpecies aboriginal of America. Monſ. de Buffon ſuppoſes about double that number exiſting on the whole earth.* Of theſe Europe, Aſia, and Africa furniſh ſuppoſe 126; that this, the 26 common to Europe and America, and about 100 which are not in America at all. The American ſpecies then are to thoſe of the reſt of the earth, as 100 to 126, or 4 to 5. But the reſidue of the earth being double the extent of America, the exact proportion would have been but 4 to 8.

Hitherto I have conſidered this hypotheſis as applied to brute animals only, and not in its extenſion to the man of America, whether aboriginal or tranſplanted. It is the opinion of Monſ. de Buffon that the former furniſhes no exception to it.† 'Quoique le 'ſauvage du nouveau monde ſoit á peuprés de même 'ſtature que l'homme de notre monde, cela ne ſuffit 'pas pour qu'il puiſs faire une exception au fait génér-'al du rapetiſſement de la nature vivante dans tout ce 'continent: le ſauvage eſt foible & petit pars les 'organes de la génération; il n'a ni poil, ni barbe, '& nulle ardeur pour ſa femelle. Quoique plus 'léger que l'Européen, parce qu'il a plus d'habitude 'à

* XXX. 219. † XVIII. 146.

Digitized by Google

‘ à courir, il eſt cependant beaucoup moins fort de
‘ corps ; il eſt auſſi bien moins ſenſible, & cepen-
‘ dant plus craintif & plus lâche ; il n'a nulle viva-
‘ cité, nulle activité dans l'ame ; celle du corps eſt
‘ moins un exercice, un mouvement volontaire qu'une
‘ néceſſité d'action cauſée par le beſoin ; otez lui la
‘ faim & la ſoif, vous détruirez en meme temps le
‘ principe actif de tous ſes mouvemens ; il demeurera
‘ ſtupidement en repos ſur ſes jambes ou couché pen-
‘ dant des jours entiers. Il ne faut pas aller chercher
‘ plus loin la cauſe de la vie diſperſée des ſauvages &
‘ de leur éloignement pour la ſociété : la plus pré-
‘ cieuſe étincelle du feu de la nature leur a été refu-
‘ ſée ; ils manquent d'ardeur pour leur femelle, &
‘ par conſequent d'amour pour leur ſemblables : ne
‘ connoiſant pas l'attachment le plus vif, le plus ten-
‘ dre de tous, leurs autres ſentimens de ce genre, ſont
‘ froids & languiſſans : ils aiment foiblement leurs
‘ péres & leurs enfans ; la ſociété la plus intime de
‘ toutes, celle dela même famille, n'a donc chez eux
‘ que de foibles liens ; la ſociété d'une famille à
‘ l'ature n'en a point du tout : dès lors nulle réunion,
‘ nulle republique, nulle état ſocial. La phyſique de
‘ l'amour fait chez eux le moral des mœurs ; leur
‘ cœur eſt glacé, leur ſociété & leur empire dur. Ils
‘ ne regardent leurs femmes que comme des ſervan-
‘ tes de peine ou des bêtes de ſomme qu'ils chan gent,
‘ ſans mènagement, du fardeau de leur chaſſe, & qu'ils
‘ forcent, ſans pitié, ſans reconnoiſſance, à des ouv-
‘ rages

Digitized by Google

'rages qui ſouvent ſont audeſſus de leurs forces : ils 'n'ont que peu d'enfan's ; ils en ont peu de ſoin : 'tout ſe reſſent de leur premier défaut ; ils ſont indif- 'ferents parce qu'ils ſont peu puiſſants, & cette indif- 'ference pour le ſaxe eſt la tache originelle qui flé- 'trit la nature, qui l'empâche de s'épanouir, & qui 'détruiſant les germes de la vie, coupe en même temps 'la racine de la ſociété. L'homme ne fait donc point 'd'exception ici. La nature en lui refuſant leſs puiſ- 'ſances de l'amour l'a plus maltraité & plus rapetiſſé 'qu'aucun des animaux.' An afflicting picture, indeed, which, for the honor of human nature, I am glad to believe has no original. Of the Indian of South America I know nothing ; for I would not honor with the appellation of knowledge, what I derive, from the fables publiſhed of them. Theſe I believe to be juſt as true as the fables of Eſop. This belief is founded on what I have ſeen of man, white, red, and black, and what has been written of him by authors, enlightened themſelves, and writing amidſt an enlightened people. The Indian of North America being more within our reach, I can ſpeak of him ſomewhat from my own knowledge, but more from the information of others better acquainted with him, and on whoſe truth and judgment I can rely. From theſe ſources I am able to ſay, in contradiction to this repreſentation, that he is neither more defective in ardor, nor more impotent with his female, than the white reduced to the ſame diet and exerciſe : that he is

Digitized by Google

is brave, when an enterprize depends on bravery; education with him making the point of honor consist in the destruction of an enemy by stratagem, and in the preservation of his own person free from injury; or perhaps this is nature; while it is education which teaches us to* honor force more than finesse: that he will defend himself against an host of enemies, always choosing to be killed, rather than† to surrender,

M though

* Sol Rodomonte spezza di venire
Se non, dove la via meno è sicura. Arioſto. 14. 117.

† In so judicious an author as Don Ulloa, and one to whom we are indebted for the most precise information we have of South America, I did not expect to find such assertions as the following. 'Los indios vencidos son los mas cobardes y pusilanimes que se pueden ver: Se hacen inocentes, se humillan hasta el desprecio, disculpan su inconsiderado arrojo, y con las súplicas y los ruegos dán seguras pruebas de su pusilanimidad. Ó lo que refieren las historas de la Conquista, sobre sus grandes acciones, es en un sentido figuado, ó el character de estas gentes no es ahora segun era entonces; pero lo que no tiene duda es, que las Naciones dela parte Septentrional subsisten en la misma libertad que siempre han tenido, sin haber sido sojuzgados por algun Principe extrano, y que viven segun su régimen y costumbres de toda la vida, sin que haya habida motivo para que muden de character; y en estos se vé lo mismo, que sucede en los del Peru, y de toda la América Meridional, reducidos, y que nunca lo han estado.' Noticias Americanas. Entretenimiento XVIII. §. 1. Don Ulloa here admits, that the authors who have described the Indians of South America, before they were enslaved, had represented them as a brave people, and therefore seems to have suspected that the cowardice which he had observed in those of the present race might be the effect of subjugation. But, supposing the Indians of North America to be cowards also, he concludes the ancestors of those of South America to have been so too, and therefore that those authors have given fictions for truth. He was probably not acquainted himself with the Indians of North America, and had formed his opinion of them from hear-say. Great numbers of French, of English,

Digitized by Google

though it be to the whites, who he knows will treat him well: that in other situations also he meets death with more deliberation, and endures tortures with a firmness unknown almost to religious enthusiasm with us: that he is affectionate to his children, careful of them, and indulgent in the extreme: that his affections comprehend his other connections, weakening, as with us, from circle to circle, as they recede from the centre: that his friendships are strong and faithful to the uttermost † extremity: that his sensibility

English, and of Americans, are perfectly acquainted with these people. Had he had an opportunity of enquiring of any of these, they would have told him, that there never was an instance known of an Indian begging his life when in the power of his enemies: on the contrary, that he courts death by every possible insult and provocation. His reasoning then would have been reversed thus. 'Since the present Indian of North America is brave, and authors tell us, that the ancestors of those of South America were brave also; it must follow, that the cowardice of their descendants is the effect of subjugation and ill treatment.' For he observes, ib. §. 27. that 'les obrages los aniquilan por la inhumanidad con que se les trata.'

† A remarkable instance of this appeared in the case of the late Col. Byrd, who was sent to the Cherokee nation to transact some business with them. It happened that some of our disorderly people had just killed one or two of that nation. It was therefore proposed in the council of the Cherokees that Col. Byrd should be put to death, in revenge for the loss of their countrymen. Among them was a chief called Silouee, who, on some former occasion, had contracted an acquaintance and friendship with Col. Byrd. He came to him every night in his tent, and told him not to be afraid, they should not kill him. After many days deliberation, however, the determination was, contrary to Silouee's expectation, that Byrd should be put to death, and some warriors were dispatched as executioners. Silouee attended them, and when

Digitized by Google

ity is keen, even the warriors weeping moſt bitterly on the loſs of their children, though in general they endeavor to appear ſuperior to human events: that his vivacity and activity of mind is equal to ours in the ſame ſituation: hence his eagerneſs for hunting, and for games of chance. The women are ſubmitted to unjuſt drudgery. This I believe is the caſe with every barbarous people. With ſuch, force is law. The ſtronger ſex therefore impoſes on the weaker. It is civilization alone which replaces women in the enjoyment of their natural equality. That firſt teaches us to ſubdue the ſelfiſh paſſions, and to reſpect thoſe rights in others which we value in ourſelves. Were we in equal barbariſm, our females would be equal drudges. The man with them is leſs ſtrong than with us, but their women ſtronger than ours; and both from the ſame obvious reaſon; becauſe our man and their woman is habituated to labor, and formed by it. With both races the ſex which is indulged with eaſe is leaſt athletic. An Indian man is ſmall in the hand and wriſt, for the ſame reaſon for which a ſailor is large and ſtrong in the arms and ſhoulders, and a porter in the legs and thighs.—They raiſe fewer children than we do. The cauſes of this are to be found, not in a difference of nature, but of circumſtance. The

when they entered the tent, he threw himſelf between them and Byrd, and ſaid to the warriors, 'This man is my friend: before you get at him, you muſt kill me.' On which they returned, and the council reſpected the principle ſo much as to recede from their determination.

Digitized by Google

The women very frequently attending the men in their parties of war and of hunting, child-bearing becomes extremely inconvenient to them. It is ſaid, therefore, that they have learned the practice of procuring abortion by the uſe of ſome vegetable; and that it even extends to prevent conception for a conſiderable time after. During theſe parties they are expoſed to numerous hazards, to exceſſive exertions, to the greateſt extremities of hunger. Even at their homes the nation depends for food, through a certain part of every year, on the gleanings of the foreſt: that is, they experience a famine once in every year. With all animals, if the females be badly fed, or not fed at all, her young periſh: and if both male and female be reduced to like want, generation becomes leſs active, leſs productive. To the obſtacles then of want and hazard, which nature has oppoſed to the multiplication of wild animals, for the purpoſe of reſtraining their numbers within certain bounds, thoſe of labor and of voluntary abortion are added with the Indian. No wonder then if they multiply leſs than we do. Where food is regularly ſupplied, a ſingle farm will ſhow more of cattle, than a whole country of foreſts can of buffaloes. The ſame Indian women, when married to white traders, who feed them and their children plentifully and regularly, who exempt them from exceſſive drudgery, who keep them ſtationary and unexpoſed to accident, produce and raiſe as many children as the white women. Inſtances are known, under theſe circumſtances,

Digitized by Google

circumſtances, of their rearing a dozen children. An inhuman practice once prevailed in this country, of making ſlaves of the Indians. It is a fact well known with us, that the Indian women ſo enſlaved produced and raiſed as numerous families as either the whites or blacks among whom they lived. It has been ſaid, that the Indians have leſs hair than the whites, except on the head. But this is a fact of which fair proof can ſcarcely be had. With them it is diſgraceful to be hairy on the body. They ſay it likens them to hogs. They therefore pluck the hair as faſt as it appears. But the traders who marry their women, and prevail on them to diſcontinue this practice, ſay that nature is the ſame with them as with the whites. Nor, if the fact be true, is the conſequence neceſſary which has been drawn from it. Negroes have notoriouſly leſs hair than the whites; yet they are more ardent. But if cold and moiſture be the agents of nature for diminiſhing the races of animals, how comes ſhe all at once to ſuſpend their operation as to the phyſical man of the new world, whom the Count acknowledges to be 'à peu près de mème ſtature que l'homme de notre 'monde,' and to let looſe their influence on his moral faculties? How has this 'combination of the elements 'and other phyſical cauſes, ſo contrary to the enlarge-'ment of animal nature in this new world, theſe ob-'ſtacles to the developement and formation of great 'germs,*' been arreſted and ſuſpended, ſo as to permit

* XVIII. 146.

Digitized by Google

mit the human body to acquire its juſt dimenſions, and by what inconceivable proceſs has their actions been directed on his mind alone? To judge of the truth of this, to form a juſt eſtimate of their genius and mental powers, more facts are wanting, and great allowance to be made for thoſe circumſtances of their ſituation which call for a diſplay of particular talents only. This done, we ſhall probably find that they are formed in mind as well as in body, on the ſame module with the † 'Homo ſapiens Europæus.' The principles of their ſociety forbidding all compulſion, they are to be led to duty and to enterprize by perſonal influence and perſuaſion. Hence eloquence in council, bravery and addreſs in war, become the foundations of all conſequence with them. To theſe acquirements all their faculties are directed. Of their bravery and addreſs in war we have multiplied proofs, becauſe we have been the ſubjects on which they were exercifed. Of their eminence in oratory, we have fewer examples, becauſe it is diſplayed chiefly in their own councils. Some, however, we have of very ſuperior luſtre. I may challenge the whole orations of Demoſthenes and Cicero, and of any more eminent orator, if Europe has furniſhed more eminent, to produce a ſingle paſſage, ſuperior to the ſpeech of Logan, a Mingo chief to lord Dunmore, when governor of this ſtate. And, as a teſtimony of their talents in this line, I beg leave to introduce it, firſt ſtating the incidents neceſſary for underſtanding it. 'In

† Lynn. Syſt. Definition of Man.

Digitized by Google

'In the ſpring of the year 1774, a robbery was 'committed by ſome Indians on certain land adven-'turers on the River Ohio. The whites in that quar-'ter, according to their cuſtom, undertook to puniſh 'this outrage in a ſummary way. Captain Michael 'Creſap, and a certain Daniel Greathouſe, leading on 'theſe parties, ſurprized, at different times, travelling 'and hunting parties of the Indians, having their 'women and children with them, and murdered ma-'ny. Among theſe were unfortunately the family of 'Logan, a chief celebrated in peace and war, and 'long diſtinguiſhed as the friend of the whites. This 'unworthy return provoked his vengeance. He ac-'cordingly ſignalized himſelf in the war which enſu-'ed. In the autumn of the ſame year a deciſive bat-'tle was fought at the mouth of the Great Kanhaway, 'between the collected forces of the Shawaneſe, Min-'goes and Delawares, and a detachment of the Vir-'ginia militia. The Indians were defeated and ſued 'for peace. Logan, however, diſdained to be ſeen 'among the ſuppliants. But leſt the ſincerity of a 'treaty ſhould be diſtruſted, from which ſo diſtinguiſh-'ed a chief abſented himſelf, he ſent, by a meſſenger, 'the following ſpeech, to be delivered to lord Dun-'more.

"I appeal to any white man to ſay, if ever he en-"tered Logan's cabin hungry, and he gave him not "meat: if ever he came cold and naked, and he "clothed him not. During the courſe of the laſt

"long

Digitized by Google

"long and bloody war Logan remained idle in his "cabin, an advocate for peace. Such was my love "for the whites, that my countrymen pointed as they "paſſed, and ſaid, 'Logan is the friend of white men.' "I had even thought to have lived with you, but for "the injuries of one man. Colonel Creſap, the laſt "ſpring, in cold blood, and unprovoked, murdered "all the relations of Logan, not even ſparing my "women and children. There runs not a drop "of my blood in the veins of any living crea- "ture. This called on me for revenge. I have ſought "it: I have killed many: I have fully glutted my "vengeance: for my country I rejoice at the beams "of peace. But do not harbor a thought that mine "is the joy of fear. Logan never felt fear. He will "not turn on his heel to ſave his life. Who is there "to mourn for Logan?—Not one."

Before we condemn the Indians of this continent as wanting genius, we muſt conſider that letters have not yet been introduced among them. Were we to compare them in their preſent ſtate with the Europeans, north of the Alps, when the Roman arts and arms firſt croſſed thoſe mountains, the compariſon would be unequal, becauſe at that time, thoſe parts of Europe were ſwarming with numbers, becauſe numbers produce emulation, and multiply the chances of improvement, and one improvement begets another. Yet I may ſafely aſk, how many good poets, how many able mathematicians, how many great inventors in

arts

Digitized by Google

arts or ſciences, had Europe, north of the Alps, then produced? And it was ſixteen centuries after this before a Newton could be formed. I do not mean to deny, that there are varieties in the race of man, diſtinguiſhed by their powers both of body and mind. I believe there are, as I ſee to be the caſe in the races of other animals. I only mean to ſuggeſt a doubt, whether the bulk and faculties of animals depend on the ſide of the Atlantic on which their food happens to grow, or which furniſhes the elements of which they are compounded? Whether nature has enliſted herſelf as a Cis or Tranſ-Atlantic partiſan? I am induced to ſuſpect, theſe has been more eloquence than ſound reaſoning diſplayed in ſupport of this theory; that it is one of thoſe caſes where the judgment has been ſeduced by a glowing pen; and whilſt I render every tribute of honor and eſteem to the celebrated zoologiſt, who has added, and is ſtill adding ſo many precious things to the treaſures of ſcience, I muſt doubt whether in this inſtance he has not cheriſhed error alſo, by lending her for a moment his vivid imagination and bewitching language. (4)

So far the Count de Buffon has carried this new theory of the tendency of nature to belittle her productions on this ſide of the Atlantic. Its application to the race of whites, tranſplanted from Europe, remained for the Abbé Raynal. 'On doit etre etonné '(he ſays) que l'Amerique n'ait pas encore produit 'un bon poëte, un habile mathematician, un homme

Digitized by Google

l. de genié dans un ſeul art, ou une ſeule ſcience.' 7. 'Hiſt. Philos. p. 92. ed. Maeſtrich. 1774. 'America has not yet produced one good poet.' When we ſhall have exiſted as a people as long as the Greeks did before they produced a Homer, the Romans a Virgil, the French a Racine and Voltaire, the Engliſh a Shakeſpeare and Milton, ſhould this reproach be ſtill true, we will enquire from what unfriendly cauſes it has proceeded, that the other countries of Europe and quarters of the earth ſhall not have inſcribed any name in the roll of poets.* But neither has America produced 'one able mathematician, one man of 'genius in a ſingle art or a ſingle ſcience.' In war we have produced a Waſhington, whoſe memory will be adored while liberty ſhall have votaries, whoſe name will triumph over time, and will in future ages aſſume its juſt ſtation among the moſt celebrated worthies of the world, when that wretched philoſophy ſhall be forgotten which would have arranged him among the degeneracies of nature. In phyſics we have produced a Franklin, than whom no one of the preſent age has made more important diſcoveries, nor has enriched philoſophy with more, or more ingenious ſolutions of the phenomena of nature. We have ſuppoſed

* Has the world as yet produced more than two poets, acknowledged to be ſuch by all nations? An Engliſhman, only, reads Milton with delight, an Italian Taſſo, a Frenchman Henriade, a Portugueſe Camoens, but Homer and Virgil have been the rapture of every age and nation: they are read with enthuſiaſm in their originals by thoſe who can read the originals, and in tranſlations by thoſe who cannot.

Digitized by Google

ſuppoſed Mr. Rittenhouſe ſecond to no aſtronomer living: that in genius he muſt be the firſt, becauſe he is ſelf-taught. As an artiſt he has exhibited as great a proof of mechanical genius as the world has ever produced. He has not indeed made a world; but he has by imitation approached nearer its Maker than any man who has lived from the creation to this day.* As in philoſophy and war, ſo in government, in oratory, in painting, in the plaſtic art, we might ſhow that America, though but a child of yeſterday, has already given hopeful proofs of genius, as well of the nobler kinds, which arouſe the beſt feelings of man, which call him into action, which ſubſtantiate his freedom, and conduct him to happineſs, as of the ſubordinate, which ſerve to amuſe him only. We therefore ſuppoſe, that this reproach is as unjuſt as it is unkind; and that, of the geniuſes which adorn the preſent age, America contributes its full ſhare. For comparing it with thoſe countries, where genius is moſt cultivated, where are the moſt excellent models for art, and ſcaffolding for the attainment of ſcience, as France and England for inſtance, we calculate thus: The United States contain three millions of inhabitants; France twenty millions; and the Britiſh iſlands ten. We produce a Waſhington, a Franklin,

* There are various ways of keeping truth out of ſight. Mr. Rittenhouſe's model of the planetary ſyſtem has the plagiary appellation of an Orrery; and the quadrant invented by Godfrey, an American alſo, and with the aid of which the European nations traverſe the globe, is called Hadley's quadrant.

Digitized by Google

246804

Franklin, a Rittenhouſe. France then ſhould have half a dozen in each of theſe lines, and Great-Britain half that number, equally eminent. It may be true, that France has: we are but juſt becoming acquainted with her, and our acquaintance ſo far gives us high ideas of the genius of her inhabitants. It would be injuring too many of them to name particularly a Voltaire, a Buffon, the conſtellation of Encyclopediſts, the Abbé Raynal himſelf, &c. &c. We therefore have reaſon to believe ſhe can produce her full quota of genius. The preſent war having ſo long cut off all communication with Great-Britain, we are not able to make a fair eſtimate of the ſtate of ſcience in that country. The ſpirit in which ſhe wages war, is the only ſample before our eyes, and that does not ſeem the legitimate offspring either of ſcience or of civilization. The ſun of her glory is faſt deſcending to the horizon. Her philoſophy has croſſed the channel, her freedom the Atlantic, and herſelf ſeems paſſing to that awful diſſolution, whoſe iſſue is not given human foreſight to ſcan.*

Having

* In a later edition of the Abbé Raynal's work, he has withdrawn his cenſure from that part of the new world inhabited by the Federo-Americans; but has left it ſtill on the other parts. North America has always been more acceſſible to ſtrangers than South. If he was miſtaken then as to the former, he may be ſo as to the latter. The glimmerings which reach us from South America enable us only to ſee that its inhabitants are held under the accumulated preſſure of ſlavery, ſuperſtition and ignorance. Whenever they ſhall be able to riſe under this weight, and ſhow themſelves to the reſt of the world, they will probably ſhow they are like the reſt of the world. We have not yet ſufficient

Digitized by Google

Having given a ſketch of our minerals, vegetables, and quadrupeds, and being led by a proud theory to make a compariſon of the latter with thoſe of Europe, and to extend it to the man of America, both aboriginal and emigrant, I will proceed to the remaining articles comprehended under the preſent query.

Between ninety and an hundred of our birds have been deſcribed by Cateſby. His drawings are better as to form and attitude, than coloring which is generally too high. They are the following.

ſufficient evidence that there are more *lakes* and *fogs* in South America than in the other parts of the earth. As little do we know what would be their operation on the mind of man. That country has been viſited by Spaniards and Portugueſe chiefly, and almoſt excluſively. Theſe, going from a country of the old world remarkably dry in its ſoil and climate, fancied there were more lakes and fogs in South America than in Europe. An inhabitant of Ireland, Sweden, or Finland would have formed the contrary opinion. Had South America ben diſcovered and ſettled by a people from a fenny country, it would probably have been repreſented as much dryer than the old world. A patient purſuit of facts, and cautious combination and compariſon of them, is the drudgery to which man is ſubject by his Maker, if he wiſhes to attain ſure knowledge.

BIRDS

Digitized by Google

BIRDS of VIRGINIA.

Linnean Deſignation.	*Cateſby's Deſignation.*		*Popular Names.*	*Buffon oiſeaux.*
Lanius tyrannus	Muſcicapa coronâ rubrâ -	1.55	Tyrant. Field marten -	8.398
Vulture aura	Buteo ſpecie Gallo-pavonis -	1. 6	Turkey buzzard - -	1.246
Falco leucocephalus	Aquila capite albo - -	1. 1	Bald eagle - - -	1.138
Falco ſpaverius	Accipiter minor - - -	1. 5	Little hawk. Sparrow hawk	
Falco columbarius	Accipiter palumbarius -	1. 3	Pigeon hawk - - -	1.338
Falco furcatus	Accipiter caudâ furcatâ - -	1. 4	Forked tail kawk -	1.286.312
	Accipiter piſcatorius - -	1. 2	Fiſhing hawk - -	1.199
Strix aſio	Noctua aurita minor - -	1. 7	Little Owl - - -	1.141
Piſitticus Carolinienſis	Piſitticus Carolinienſis -	1.11	Parrot of Carolina. Parroquet	11.383
Corvus eriſtatus	Pica glandaria, cærulea criſtata	1.15	Blue jay - - -	5.164
Oriolus Baltimore	Icterus ex aureo nigroque varius	1.48	Baltimore bird - -	5.318
Oriolus ſpurius	Icterus minor - - -	1.49	Baſtard Baltimore - -	5.321
Gracula quiſcula	Monedula purpurea - -	1.12	Purple jackdaw. Crow blackbird	5.134
Cuculus Americanus	Cuculus Carolinienſis - -	1.9	Carolina cuckow - -	12.62
Picus principalis	Picus maximus roſtro albo -	1.16	White bill woodpecker -	13.69
Picus pileatus	Picus niger maximus capite rubro	1.17	Large red-creſted woodpecker	13.72
Picus erythrocephalus	Picus capite toto rubro - -	1.20	Red-headed woodpecker -	13.83

Digitized by Google

Linnæan Deſignation.	*Cateſby's Deſignation.*		*Popular Names.*	*Buffon oiſeaux.*
Picus auratus	Picus major alis aureis	1.18	Gold winged woodpecker. Yucher	13.59
Picus Carolinus	Picus ventre rubro	1.19	Red bellied woodpecker	13.105
Picus pubeſcens	Picus varius minimus	1.21	Smalleſt ſpotted woodpecker	13.113
Picus villoſus	Picus medius quaſi-villoſus	1.19	Hairy woodpecker. Spec. woodpec.	13.111
Picus varius	Picus varius minor ventre luteo	1.21	Yellow bellied woodpecker	13.115
Sitta Europæa	Sitta capite nigro	1.22	Nuthatch	10.213
	Sitta capite fuſco	1,22	Small nuthatch	10.214
Alcedo alcyon	Iſpida	1.69	Kingfiſher	13.310
Certhia pinus	Parus Americanus luteſcens	1.61	Pinecreeper	9.433
Trochillus culubris	Mellivora avis Carolinienſis	1.65	Humming bird	11.116
Anas Canadenſis	Aſner Canadenſis	1.92	Wild gooſe	17.122
Anas bucephala	Anas minor purpureo capite	1.95	Buffel's-head duck	17.356
Anas ruſtica	Anas minor ex albo & fuſco vario	1.98	Little brown duck	17.413
Anas diſcors	Querquedula Americana variegata	1.10	White face teal	17.403
Anas diſcors	Querquedula Americana fuſca	1.99	Blue wing teal	17.405
Anas ſponſa	Anas Americanus chriſtatus elegans	1.97	Summer duck	17.351
	Anas Americanus lato reſtro	1.96	Blue wing ſhoveller	17.275
Mergus acullatus	Anas chriſtatus	1.94	Round creſted duck	15.437
Columbus podiceps	Prodicipes minor roſtro vario	1.91	Pied bill dopchic	15.383

Digitized by Google

Linnæan Deſignation.	*Cateſby's Deſignation.*		*Popular Names.*	*Buffon oiſeaux.*
Ardea Herodias	Ardea chriſtata maxima Americana	3.10	Largeſt creſted heron	14.123
Ardea violacea	Ardea ſtellariis chriſtata Americana	1.79	Creſted bittern	14.134
Ardea cærulea	Ardea cærulea	1.76	Blue heron. Crane	1.131
Ardea vireſcens	Ardea ſtellarius minima	1.80	Small bittern	14.142
Ardea æquinoctialis	Ardea alba minor Carolinienſis	1.77	Little white heron	14.136
	Ardea ſtellarius Americana	1.78	Brown bittern. Indian hen	14.175
Tantalus loculator	Pelicanus Americanus	1.81	Wood pelican	13.403
Tantalus alber	Numenius albus	1.82	White curlew	15.62
Tantalus fuſcus	Numenius fuſcus	1.83	Brown curlew	15.64
Charadrius vociferus	Pluvialis vociferus	1.71	Chattering plover. Kildee	15.151
Hæmatopus oſtralegus	Hæmatopus	1.85	Oyſter catcher	15.185
Rallus Virginianus	Gallinula Americana	1.70	Sora. Ral-bird	15.256
Meleagris Gallopavo	Gallopavo Sylveſtris	xliv.	Wild turkey	3.187.229
Tetrao Virginianus	Perdix Sylveſtris Virginiana [pus	3.12	American partridge. American quail	4.237
	Urogallus minor, or a kind of Lago-	3.1	Pheaſant. Mountain partridge	3.409
Columba paſſerina	Turtur minimus guttatus	1.26	Ground dove	4.404
Columba migratoria	Palumbus migratorius	1.23	Pigeon of paſſage. Wild pigeon	4.351
Columba Carolinienſis	Turtur Carolinienſis	1.24	Turtle. Turtle dove	4.401
Alauda alpeſtris	Alauda gutture flavo	1.32	Lark. Sky lark	9.79

Digitized by Google

Linnæan Deſignation.	*Cateſby's Deſignation.*		*Popular Names.*	*Buffon oiſeaux.*
Alauda magna	Alauda magna - - -	1.33	Field lark. Large lark -	6.59
	Sturnus niger alis fuperné rubentibus	1.13	Redwing. Starling. Marſh blackbird	5.293
Turdus migratorius	Turdus pilarus migratorius -	1.29	Fieldfare of Carolina. Rob.red breaſt	5.426 9.257
Turdus rufus	Turdus rufus - -	1.28	Fox colored thruſh. Thruſh	5.449
Turdus polyglottos	Turdus minor cinereo albus non ma-	1.27	Mocking bird - - -	5.451
	Turdus minimus - [culatus	1.31	Little thruſh - - -	5.400
Ampelis garrulus	Garrulus Carolinienſis - -	1.46	Chatterer - - -	6.162
Loxia Cardinalis	Coccothrauſtes rubra - -	1.38	Red bird. Virginia nightingale	6.185
Loxia Cærulea	Coccothrauſtes cærulea - -	1.39	Blue groſs beak - -	8.125
Emberiza hyemalis	Paſſer nivalis - - -	1.36	Snow bird - - -	8.47
Emberiza Oryzivora	Hortulanes Carolinienſis - -	1.14	Rice bird - - -	8.49
Emberiza Ciris	Fringilla tricolor - -	1.44	Painted finch - - -	7.247
Tanagra cyanea	Linaria cærulea - - -	1.45	Blue linnet - - -	7.122
	Paſſerculus - - -	1.35	Little ſparrow - - -	7.120
[thalma	Paſſer fuſcus - -	1.34	Cow-pen bird - -	7.196
Fringilla erythroph-	Paſſer niger oculis rubris -	1.34	Towhe bird - - -	7.201
Fringilla triſtris	Carduelis Americanus - -	1.43	American goldfinch. Lettuce bird	7.297
	Fringilla purpurea - -	1.41	Purple finch - - - -	8.129

Digitized by Google

Linnæan Deſignation.	*Cateſby's Deſignation.*		*Popular Names.*	*Buffon oiſeaux.*
Ardea Herodias	Ardea chriſtata maxima Americana	3.10	Largeſt creſted heron	14.123
Ardea violacea	Ardea ſtellariis chriſtata Americana	1.79	Creſted bittern	14.134
Ardea cærulea	Ardea cærulea	1.76	Blue heron. Crane	1.131
Ardea vireſcens	Ardea ſtellarius minima	1.80	Small bittern	14.142
Ardea æquinoctialis	Ardea alba minor Carolinienſis	1.77	Little white heron	14.136
	Ardea ſtellarius Americana	1.78	Brown bittern. Indian hen	14.175
Tantalus loculator	Pelicanus Americanus	1.81	Wood pelican	13.403
Tantalus alber	Numenius albus	1.82	White curlew	15.62
Tantalus fuſcus	Numenius fuſcus	1.83	Brown curlew	15.64
Charadrius vociferus	Pluvialis vociferus	1.71	Chattering plover. Kildee	15.151
Hæmatopus oſtralegus	Hæmatopus	1.85	Oyſter catcher	15.185
Rallus Virginianus	Gallinula Americana	1.70	Sora. Ral-bird	15.256
Meleagris Gallopavo	Gallopavo Sylveſtris	xliv.	Wild turkey	3.187.229
Tetrao Virginianus	Perdix Sylveſtris Virginiana [pus	3.12	American partridge. American quail	4.237
	Urogallus minor, or a kind of Lago-	3.1	Pheaſant. Mountain partridge	3.409
Columba paſſerina	Turtur minimus guttatus	1.26	Ground dove	4.404
Columba migratoria	Palumbus migratorius	1.23	Pigeon of paſſage. Wild pigeon	4.351
Columba Carolinienſis	Turtur Carolinienſis	1.24	Turtle. Turtle dove	4.401
Alauda alpeſtris	Alauda gutture flavo	1.32	Lark. Sky lark	9.79

Digitized by Google

Linnæan Designation.	*Catesby's Designation.*		*Popular Names.*	*Buffon oiseaux.*
Alauda magna	Alauda magna	1.33	Field lark. Large lark	6.59
	Sturnus niger alis fuperné rubentibus	1.13	Redwing. Starling. Marſh blackbird	5.293
Turdus migratorius	Turdus pilarus migratorius	1.29	Fieldfare of Carolina. Rob.red breaſt	5.426 / 9.257
Turdus rufus	Turdus rufus	1.28	Fox colored thruſh. Thruſh	5.449
Turdus polyglottos	Turdus minor cinereo albus non ma-	1.27	Mocking bird	5.451
	Turdus minimus [culatus	1.31	Little thruſh	5.400
Ampelis garrulus	Garrulus Carolinienſis	1.46	Chatterer	6.162
Loxia Cardinalis	Coccothrauſtes rubra	1.38	Red bird. Virginia nightingale	6.185
Loxia Cærulea	Coccothrauſtes cærulea	1.39	Blue groſs beak	8.125
Emberiza hyemalis	Paſſer nivalis	1.36	Snow bird	8.47
Emberiza Oryzivora	Hortulanes Carolinienſis	1.14	Rice bird	8.49
Emberiza Ciris	Fringilla tricolor	1.44	Painted finch	7.247
Tanagra cyanea	Linaria cærulea	1.45	Blue linnet	7.122
	Paſſerculus	1.35	Little ſparrow	7.120
[thalma	Paſſer fuſcus	1.34	Cow-pen bird	7.196
Fringilla erythroph-	Paſſer niger oculis rubris	1.34	Towhe bird	7.201
Fringilla triſtis	Carduelis Americanus	1.43	American goldfinch. Lettuce bird	7.297
	Fringilla purpurea	1.41	Purple finch	8.129

Digitized by Google

Linnæan Deſignation.	*Cateſby's Deſignation.*		*Popular Names.*	*Buffon oiſeaux.*
Muſcicapa crinita	Muſcicapa chriſtata ventre luteo.	1.52	Creſted flycatcher	8.379
Muſcicapa rubra	Muſcicapa rubra	1.56	Summer red bird	8.410
Muſcicapa ruticilla	Ruticilla Americana	1.67	Red ſtart	8.349 9.259
Muſcicapa Carolinienſis	Muſcicapa vertice nigro	1.66	Cat bird	8.372
	Muſcicapa nigreſcens	1.53	Black cap flycatcher	8.341
	Muſcicapa fuſca	1.54	Little brown flycatcher	8.344
	Muſcicapa oculis rubris	1.54	Red eyed flycatcher	8.337
Motacilla Sialis	Rubicula Americana cærulea	1.47	Blue bird	9.308
Motacilla regulus	Regulus chriſtatus	3.13	Wren	10.58
Motacilla trochilus	Oenanthe Americana pectore luteo	1.50	Yellow breſted chat	6.96
Parus bicolor	Parus chriſtatus	1.57	Creſted titmouſe	10.181
Parus Americanus	Parus fringillaris	1.64	Finch creeper	9.442
Parus Virginianus	Parus uropygeo luteo	1.58	Yellew rump	10.184
	Parus cucullo nigro	1.60	Hooded titmouſe	10.183
	Parus Americanus gutture luteo.	1.62	Yellow throated creeper	
	Parus Carolinienſis	1.63	Yellow titmouſe	9.431
Hirundo pelaſgia	Hirundo cauda aculeata Americana	3.8	American ſwallow	12.478
Hirundo purpurea	Hirundo purpurea	1.51	Purple marten. Houſe marten	12.445
Caprimulgus Europæus a	Caprimulgus	1.8	Goatſucker. Great bat	12.243
Caprimulgus Europæus	Caprimulgus minor Americanus	3.16	Whip poor Will	12.246

Digitized by Google

Beſides theſe, we have,

The Royſton crow. Corvus cornix.
Crane. Ardea Canadenſis.
Houſe ſwallow. Hirundo ruſtica.
Ground ſwallow. Hirundo riparia.
Greateſt grey eagle.
Smaller turkey buzzard, with a feathered head.
Greateſt owl, or night hawk.
Wet hawk, which feeds flying.
Raven.
Water pelican of the Miſſiſippi, whoſe pouch holds a peck.
Swan.
Loon.
Cormorant.
The Duck and Mallard.
Widgeon.
Sheldrack, or canvas back.
Black head.
Ballcoot.
Sprigtail.
Didapper, or Dopchick.
Spoon billed duck.
Water-witch.
Water-pheaſant.
Mow-bird.
Blue Peter.
Water wagtail.
Yellow-legged ſnipe.
Squatting ſnipe.
Small plover.
Whiſtling plover.
Woodcock.
Red bird, with black head, wings and tail.

And doubtleſs many others which have not yet been deſcribed and claſſed.

To this catalogue of our indigenous animals, I will add a ſhort account of an anomaly of nature, taking place ſometimes in the race of negroes brought from Africa, who, though black themſelves, have in rare inſtances, white children, called Albinos. I have known four of theſe myſelf, and have faithful accounts of three others. The circumſtances in which all the individuals agree are theſe. They are of a pallid cadaverous white, untinged with red, without any colored ſpots or ſeams; their hair of the ſame kind of white, ſhort, coarſe, and curled as is that of the negro; all of them well formed, ſtrong, healthy, perfect in their ſenſes, except that of ſight, and born of parents

Digitized by Google

parents who had no mixture of white blood. Three of theſe Albinos were ſiſters, having two other full ſiſters, who were black. The youngeſt of the three was killed by lightning, at twelve years of age. The eldeſt died at about 27 years of age, in child-bed, with her ſecond child. The middle one is now alive in health, and has iſſue, as the eldeſt had, by a black man, which iſſue was black. They are uncommonly ſhrewd, quick in their apprehenſions and in reply. Their eyes are in a perpetual tremulous vibration, very weak, and much affected by the ſun: but they ſee much better in the night than we do. They are of the property of Col. Skipwith of Cumberland. The fourth is a negro woman, whoſe parents came from Guinea, and had three other children, who were of their own color. She is freckled, her eye-ſight ſo weak that ſhe is obliged to wear a bonnet in the ſummer; but it is better in the night than day. She had an Albino child by a black man. It died at the age of a few weeks. Theſe were the property of Col. Carter, of Albemarle. A ſixth inſtance is a woman of the property of a Mr. Butler, near Peterſburgh. She is ſtout and robuſt, has iſſue a daughter, jet black, by a black man. I am not informed as to her eye-ſight. The ſeventh inſtance is of a male belonging to a Mr. Lee of Cumberland. His eyes are tremulous and weak. He is tall of ſtature, and now advanced in years. He is the only male of the Albinos which have come within my information. Whatever be the cauſe of the diſ-

eaſe

Digitized by Google

ſafe in the ſkin or in its coloring matter, which produces this change, it ſeems more incident to the female than male ſex. To theſe I may add the mention of a negro man within my own knowledge, born black, and of black parents; on whoſe chin, when a boy, a white ſpot appeared. This continued to increaſe till he became a man, by which time it had extended over his chin, lips, one cheek, the under jaw, and neck on that ſide. It is of the Albino white, without any mixture of red, and has for ſeveral years been ſtationary. He is robuſt and healthy, and the change of color was not accompanied with any ſenſible diſeaſe, either general or topical.

Of our fiſh and inſects there has been nothing like a full deſcription or collection. More of them are deſcribed in Cateſby than in any other work. Many alſo are to be found in Sir Hans Sloane's Jamaica, as being common to that and this country. The honey-bee is not a native of our continent. Marcgrave indeed mentions a ſpecies of honey-bee in Brazil. But this has no ſting and is therefore different from the one we have, which reſembles perfectly that of Europe. The Indians concur with us in the tradition that it was brought from Europe; but when, and by whom, we know not. The bees have generally extended themſelves into the country, a little in advance of the white ſettlers. The Indians therefore call them the white man's fly, and conſider their approach as indicating the approach of the ſettlements of the whites.

Digitized by Google

whites. A queſtion here occurs, how far northwardly have theſe inſects been found? That they are unknown in Lapland, I infer from Scheffer's information, that the Laplanders eat the pine bark, prepared in a certain way, inſtead of thoſe things ſweetened with ſugar. 'Hoc comedunt pro rebus ſaccharo conditis.' Scheff. Lapp. c. 18. Certainly if they had honey, it would be a better ſubſtitute for ſugar than any preparation of the pine bark. Kalm tells us* the honey-bee cannot live through the winter in Canada. They furniſh then an additional proof of the remarkable fact firſt obſerved by the Count de Buffon, and which has thrown ſuch a blaze of light on the field of natural hiſtory, that no animals are found in both continents, but thoſe which are able to bear the cold of thoſe regions where they probably join.

* I. 126.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY VII.

A NOTICE of all that can increaſe the progreſs of human knowledge?

Under the latitude of this query, I will preſume it not improper nor unacceptable to furniſh ſome data for eſtimating the climate of Virginia. Journals of obſervations on the quantity of rain, and degree of heat, being lengthy, confuſed, and too minute to produce general and diſtinct ideas, I have taken five years' obſervations, to wit, from 1772 to 1777, made in Williamſburgh and its neighborhood, have reduced them to an average for every month in the year, and ſtated thoſe averages in the following table, adding an analytical view of the winds during the ſame period.

Digitized by Google

	Fall of rain, &c. in inches	Least & greatest daily heat by Farenheit's thermometer.		WINDS.								
				N.	N.E.	E.	S.E.	S.	SW.	W.	NW	Tot.
Jan.	3.192	38½ to	44	73	47	32	10	11	78	40	46	337
Feb.	2.049	41	47½	61	52	24	11	4	63	30	31	276
March	3.95	48	54½	49	44	38	28	14	83	29	33	318
April	3.68	56	62½	35	44	54	19	9	58	18	20	257
May	2.871	63	70½	27	36	62	23	7	74	32	20	281
June	4.751	71½	78½	22	34	43	24	13	84	25	25	267
July	4.497	77	82½	41	44	75	15	7	93	32	19	328
Aug.	9.153	76½	81	43	52	40	30	9	103	27	30	334
Sept.	4.761	69½	74½	70	60	51	18	10	81	18	37	345
Oct.	3.633	61½	66½	52	77	64	15	6	56	23	34	327
Nov.	2.617	47½	53½	74	21	20	14	9	63	35	58	294
Dec.	2 877	43	48½	64	37	18	16	10	91	42	56	334
Total.	47.038	8AM.	4PM.	611	548	521	223	106	926	351	409	3698

Digitized by Google

The rains of every month, (as of January, for inſtance) through the whole period of years, were added ſeparately and an average drawn from them. The cooleſt and warmeſt points of the ſame day in each year of the period, were added ſeparately, and an average of the greateſt cold and greateſt heat of that day, was formed. From the averages of every day in the month, a general average for the whole month was formed. The point from which the wind blew, was obſerved two or three times in every day. Theſe obſervations, in the month of January, for inſtance, through the whole period, amounted to 337. At 73 of theſe, the wind was from the north; at 47 from the North-eaſt, &c. So that it will be eaſy to ſee in what proportion each wind uſually prevails in each month; or, taking the whole year, the total of obſervations through the whole period having been 3698, it will be obſerved that 611 of them were from the north, 558 from the north-eaſt, &c.

Though by this table it appears we have on an average 47 inches of rain annually, which is conſiderably more than uſually falls in Europe, yet from the information I have collected, I ſuppoſe we have a much greater proportion of ſunſhine here than there. Perhaps it will be found, there are twice as many cloudy days in the middle parts of Europe, as in the United States of America. I mention the middle parts of Europe, becauſe my information does not extend to its northern or ſouthern parts.

Digitized by Google

In an extenſive country, it will of courſe be expected, that the climate is not the ſame in all its parts. It is remarkable, that proceeding on the ſame parallel of latitude weſtwardly, the climate becomes colder in like manner as when you proceed northwardly. This continues to be the caſe till you attain the ſummit of the Alleghaney, which is the higheſt land between the ocean and the Miſſiſippi. From thence, deſcending in the ſame latitude to the Miſſiſippi, the change reverſes; and, if we may believe travellers, it becomes warmer there than it is in the ſame latitude on the ſea ſide. Their teſtimony is ſtrengthened by the vegetables and animals which ſubſiſt and multiply there naturally, and do not on our ſea-coaſt. Thus catalpas grow ſpontaneouſly on the Miſſiſippi, as far as the latitude of 37°, and reeds as far as 38°. Perroquets even winter on the Scioto, in the 39th degree of latitude. In the ſummer of 1779, when the thermometer was at 90° at Monticello, and 96 at Williamſburgh, it was 110° at Kaſkaſkia. Perhaps the mountain, which overhangs this village on the north ſide, may, by its reflection, have contributed ſomewhat to produce this heat. The difference of temperature of the air at the ſea-coaſt, or on the Cheſapeak bay, and at the Alleghaney, has not been aſcertained: but cotemporary obſervations, made at Williamſburgh, or in its neighborhood, and at Monticello, which is on the moſt eaſtern ridge of the mountains, called the South weſt, where they are interſected

Digitized by Google

terfected by the Rivanna, have furniſhed a ratio by which that difference may in ſome degree be conjectured. Theſe obſervations make the difference between Williamſburg and the neareſt mountains, at the poſition before-mentioned, to be on an average 6 1-8 degrees of Farenheit's thermometer. Some allowance, however, is to be made for the difference of latitude between theſe two places, the latter being 38° 8′ 17″, which is 52′ 22″ north of the former. By cotemporary obſervations of between five and ſix weeks, the averaged, and almoſt unvaried difference of the height of mercury in the barometer, at thoſe two places, was, 784 of an inch, the atmoſphere at Monticello being ſo much the lighteſt, that is to ſay, about one-thirty-ſeventh of its whole weight. It ſhould be obſerved, however, that the hill of Monticello is of 500 feet perpendicular height above the river which waſhes its baſe. This poſition being nearly central between our northern and ſouthern boundaries, and between the bay and Alleghaney, may be conſidered as furniſhing the beſt average of the temperature of our climate. Williamſburgh is much too near the ſouth-eaſtern corner to give a fair idea of our general temperature.

But a more remarkable difference is in the winds which prevail in the different parts of the country. The following table exhibits a comparative view of the winds prevailing at Williamſburgh, and at Monticello. It is formed by reducing nine months obſervations at Monticello

Digitized by Google

Monticello to four principal points, to wit, the north-east, south-east, south-west, and north-west; these points being perpendicular to, or parallel with our coast, mountains, and rivers: and by reducing in like manner, an equal number of observations, to wit, 421 from the preceding table of winds at Williamsburgh, taking them proportionably from every point,

	N.E.	S.E.	S.W.	N.W.	Total.
Williamsburgh	127	61	132	101	421
Monticello	32	91	126	172	221

By this it may be seen that the south-west wind prevails equally at both places; that the north-east is, next to this, the principal wind towards the sea-coast, and the north-west is the predominant wind at the mountains. The difference between these two winds to sensation, and in fact, is very great. The north-east is loaded with vapor, insomuch, that the salt-makers have found that their crystals would not shoot while that blows; it brings a distressing chill, and is heavy and oppressive to the spirits: the north-west is dry, cooling, elastic and animating. The eastern and south-eastern breezes come on generally in the afternoon. They have advanced into the country very sensible within the memory of people now living. They formerly did not penetrate far above Williamsburgh. They are now frequent at Richmond, and every now and then reach the mountains. They deposit most of their moisture however before they

Digitized by Google

they get that far. As the lands become more cleared, it is probable they will extend ſtill further weſtward.

Going out in the open air, in the temperate and warm months of the year, we often meet with bodies of warm air, which paſſing by us in two or three ſeconds, do not afford time to the moſt ſenſible thermometer to ſeize their temperature. Judging from my feelings only, I think they approach the ordinary heat of the human body. Some of them perhaps go a little beyond it. They are of about 20 or 30 feet diameter horizontally. Of their height we have no experience, but probably they are globular volumes wafted or rolled along with the wind. But whence taken, where found, or how generated? They are not to be aſcribed to volcanos, becauſe we have none. They do not happen in the winter when the farmers kindle large fires in clearing up their grounds. They are not confined to the ſpring ſeaſon, when we have fires which traverſe whole counties, conſuming the leaves which have fallen from the trees. And they are too frequent and general to be aſcribed to accidental fires. I am perſuaded their cauſe muſt be ſought for in the atmoſphere itſelf, to aid us in which I know but of theſe conſtant circumſtances; a dry air; a temperature as warm at leaſt as that of the ſpring or autumn; and a moderate current of wind. They are moſt frequent about ſun-ſet; rare in the middle parts of the day; and I do not recollect having ever met with them in the morning.

The

Digitized by Google

The variation in the weight of our atmosphere, as indicated by the barometer, is not equal to two inches of mercury. During twelve months observation at Williamsburgh, the extremes were 29, and 30.86 inches, the difference being 1.86 of an inch: and in nine months, during which the height of the mercury was noted at Monticello, the extremes were 28.48 and 29.69 inches, the variation being 1.21 of an inch. A gentleman who has observed his barometer many years, assures me it has never varied two inches. Cotemporary observations, made at Monticello and Williamsburgh, proved the variations in the weight of air to be simultaneous and corresponding in these two places.

Our changes from heat to cold, and cold to heat, are very sudden and great. The mercury in Farenheit's thermometer has been known to descend from 92° to 47° in thirteen hours.

It is taken for granted that the preceding table of average heat will not give a false idea on this subject, as it proposes to state only the ordinary heat and cold of each month, and not those which are extraordinary. At Williamsburgh in August 1766, the mercury in Farenheit's thermometer was at 98° corresponding with 29⅓ of Reaumur. At the same place in January 1780 it was 6° corresponding with 11½ below o, of Reaumur. I believe* these may be considered to be nearly

* At Paris, in 1753, the mercury in Reaumur's thermometer was at 30½ above o, and in 1776, it was 16 below o. The extremities of heat and cold therefore at Paris, are greater than at Williamsburgh, which is in the hottest part of Virginia.

Digitized by Google

nearly the extremes of heat and cold in that part of the country. The latter may moſt certainly, as at that time, York River, at York town, was frozen over ſo that people walked acroſs it; a circumſtance which proves it to have been colder than the winter of 1740, 1741, uſually called the cold winter, when York river did not freeze over at that place. In the ſame ſeaſon of 1780, Cheſapeak bay was ſolid, from its head to the mouth of Patowmac. At Annapolis, where it is $5\frac{1}{4}$ miles over between the neareſt points of land, the ice was from 5 to 7 inches thick quite acroſs, ſo that loaded carriages went over on it. Thoſe, our extremes of heat and cold, of 6° and 98° were indeed very diſtreſſing to us, and were thought to put the extent of the human conſtitution to conſiderable trial. Yet a Siberian would have conſidered them as ſcarcely a ſenſible variation. At Jenniſeitz in that country, in latitude 58° 27′ we are told that the cold in 1735 ſunk the mercury by Farenheit's ſcale to 126° below nothing; and the inhabitants of the ſame country uſe ſtove rooms two or three times a week, in which they ſtay two hours at a time, the atmoſphere of which raiſes the mercury to 135° above nothing. Late experiments ſhow that the human body will exiſt in rooms heated to 140° of Reaumur, equal to 347° of Farenheit's and 135° above boiling water. The hotteſt point of the 24 hours is about four o'clock, P. M. and the dawn of day the coldeſt.

The acceſs of froſt in autumn, and its receſs the

Digitized by Google

the ſpring, do not ſeem to depend merely on the degree of cold; much leſs on the air's being at the freezing point. White froſts are frequent when the thermometer is at 47° have killed young plants of Indian corn at 48° and have been known at 54°. Black froſt, and even ice, have been produced at 38½, which is 6½ degrees above the freezing point. That other circumſtances muſt be combined with the cold to produce froſt, is evident from this alſo, on the higher parts of mountains, where it is abſolutely colder than in the plains on which they ſtand, froſts do not appear ſo early by a conſiderable ſpace of time in autumn, and go off ſooner in the ſpring, than in the plains. I have known froſts ſo ſevere as to kill the hiccory trees round about Monticello, and yet not injure the tender fruit bloſſoms then in bloom on the top and higher parts of the mountain; and in the courſe of 40 years, during which it has been ſettled, there have been but two inſtances of a general loſs of fruit on it; while, in the circumjacent country, the fruit has eſcaped but twice in the laſt ſeven years. The plants of tobacco, which grow from the roots of thoſe which have been cut off in the ſummer, are frequently green here at Chriſtmas. This privilege againſt the froſt is undoubtedly combined with the want of dew on the mountains. That the dew is very rare on the higher parts, I may ſay with certainty, from 12 years obſervations, having ſcarcely ever, during that time, ſeen an unequivocal proof of its exiſtence on them at all during ſummer.

Digitized by Google

ſummer. Severe froſts in the depth of winter prove that the region of dews extends higher in that ſeaſon than the tops of the mountains: but certainly, in the ſummer ſeaſon, the vapors by the time they attain that height, are become ſo attenuated as not to ſubſide and form a dew when the ſun retires.

The weavil has not yet aſcended the high mountains.

A more ſatisfactory eſtimate of our climate to ſome, may perhaps be formed by noting the plants which grow here, ſubject however to be killed by our ſevereſt colds. Theſe are the fig, pomegranate, artichoke, and European walnut. In mild winters, lettuce and endive require no ſhelter; but generally they need a ſlight covering. I do not know that the want of long moſs, reed, myrtle, ſwamp laurel, holly and cypreſs, in the upper country, proceeds from a greater degree of cold, nor that they were ever killed with any degree of cold in the lower country. The alloe lived in Williamſburgh, in the open air, through the ſevere winter of 1779, 1780.

A change in our climate, however, is taking place very ſenſibly. Both heats and colds are become much more moderate within the memory even of the middle-aged. Snows are leſs frequent and leſs deep. They do not often lie, below the mountains, more than one, two, or three days, and very rarely a week. They are remembered to have been formerly frequent, deep, and of long continuance. The elderly inform

Digitized by Google

me, the earth uſed to be covered with ſnow about three months in every year. The rivers which then ſeldom failed to freeze over in the courſe of the winter, ſcarcely ever do ſo now. This change has produced an unfortunate fluctuation between heat and cold, in the ſpring of the year, which is very fatal to fruits. From the year 1741 to 1769, an interval of twenty-eight years, there was no inſtance of fruit killed by the froſt in the neighborhood of Monticello. An intenſe cold, produced by conſtant ſnows, kept the buds locked up till the ſun could obtain, in the ſpring of the year, ſo fixed an aſcendancy as to diſſolve thoſe ſnows, and protect the buds, during their developement, from every danger of returning cold. The accumulated ſnows of the winter remaining to be diſſolved all together in the ſpring, produced thoſe overflowings of our rivers, ſo frequent then, and ſo rare now.

Having had occaſion to mention the particular ſituation of Monticello for other purpoſes, I will juſt take notice that its elevation affords an opportunity of ſeeing a phænomenon which is rare at land, though frequent at ſea. The ſeamen call it *looming*. Philoſophy is as yet in the rear of the ſeamen, for ſo far from having accounted for it, ſhe has not given it a name. Its principal effect is to make diſtant objects appear larger, in oppoſition to the general law of viſion, by which they are diminiſhed. I know an inſtance, at York-town, from whence the water proſpect eaſtwardly is without termination;

Digitized by Google

termination, wherein a canoe with three men, at a great distance was taken for a ship with its three masts. I am little acquainted with the phænomenon as it shows itself at sea; but at Monticello it is familiar. There is a solitary mountain about forty miles off in the south, whose natural shape, as presented to view there, is a regular cone; but by the effect of looming, it sometimes subsides almost totally in the horizon; sometimes it rises more acute and more elevated; sometimes it is hemispherical; and sometimes its sides are perpendicular, its top flat, and as broad as its base. In short it assumes at times the most whimsical shapes, and all these perhaps successively in the same morning. The Blue ridge of mountains comes into view in the north-east, at about 100 miles distance, and approaching in a direct line, passes by within 20 miles, and goes off to the south-west. This phænomenon begins to show itself on these mountains, at about 50 miles distance and continues beyond that as far as they are seen. I remark no particular state, either in the weight, moisture, or heat of the atmosphere, necessary to produce this. The only constant circumstances are its appearance in the morning only, and on objects at least 40 or 50 miles distant. In this latter circumstance, if not in both, it differs from the looming on the water. Refraction will not account for the metamorphosis. That only changes the proportion, of length and breadth, base and altitude, preserving the

Digitized by Google

the general outlines. Thus it may make a circle appear elliptical, raiſe or depreſs a cone, but by none of its laws as yet developed, will it make a circle appear a ſquare, or a cone a ſphere.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY VIII.

THE number of its inhabitants?

The following table ſhews the number of perſons imported for the eſtabliſhment of our colony in its infant ſtate, and the cenſus of inhabitants at different periods, extracted from our hiſtorians and public records, as particularly as I have had opportunities and leiſure to examine them. Succeſſive lines in the ſame year ſhew ſucceſſive periods of time in that year. I have ſtated the cenſus in two different columns, the whole inhabitants having been ſometimes numbered, and ſometimes the *tythes* only. This term, with us, includes the free males above 16 years of age, and ſlaves above that age of both ſexes. A further examination of our records would render this hiſtory of our population much more ſatisfactory and perfect, by furniſhing a greater number of intermediate terms. Thoſe however which are here ſtated will enable us to calculate, with a conſiderable degree of preciſion, the rate at which we have increaſed. During the infancy of the colony, while numbers were ſmall, wars, importations, and other accidental circumſtances render the progreſſion fluctuating and irregular. By the year 1654, however, it becomes tolerably uniform, importations having in a great meaſure ceaſed from the diſſolution of the company, and the inhabitants become

Digitized by Google

Years.	Settlers imported.	Census of Inhabitants.	Census of Tythes.
1607	100		
		40	
	120		
1608		130	
	70		
1609		400	
	16		
		60	
1610	150		
		200	
1611	3 ship loads.		
	300		
1612	80		
1617		400	
1618	200		
	40		
		600	
1619	1216		
1621	1300		
1622		3800	
		2500	
1628		3000	
1632			2000
1644			4822
1645			5000
1652			7000
1654			7209
1700			22,000
1748			82,100
1759			105,000
1772			153,000
1782		567,614	

Digitized by Google

become too numerous to be ſenſibly affected by Indian wars. Beginning at that period, therefore, we find that from thence to the year 1772, our tythes had increaſed from 7209 to 153,000. The whole term being of 118 years, yields a duplication once in every $27\frac{1}{4}$ years. The intermediate enumerations taken in 1700, 1748, and 1759, furniſh proofs of the uniformity of this progreſſion. Should this race of increaſe continue, we ſhall have between ſix and ſeven millions of inhabitants within 95 years. If we ſuppoſe our country to be bounded, at ſome future day, by the meridian of the mouth of the Great Kanhaway, (within which it has been before conjectured, are 64,461 ſquare miles) there will then be 100 inhabitants for every ſquare mile, which is nearly the ſtate of population in the Britiſh iſlands.

Here I will beg leave to propoſe a doubt. The preſent deſire of America is to produce rapid population by as great importations of foreigners as poſſible. But is this founded in good policy? The advantage propoſed is the multiplication of numbers. Now let us ſuppoſe (for example only) that, in this ſtate, we could double our numbers in one year by the importation of foreigners; and this is a greater acceſſion than the moſt ſanguine advocate for emigration has a right to expect. Then I ſay, beginning with a double ſtock, we ſhall attain any given degree of population only 27 years and 3 months ſooner than if we proceed on our ſingle ſtock. If we propoſe four millions

Digitized by Google

lions and a half as a competent population for this ſtate, we ſhould be $54\frac{1}{2}$ years attaining it, could we at once double our numbers; and $81\frac{3}{4}$ years, if we rely on natural propagation, as may be ſeen by the following table.

	Proceeding on our preſent ſtock	*Proceeding on a double ſtock.*
1781	567,614	1,135,228
1808	1,135,228	2,270,456
1835	2,270,456	4,540,912
1862	4,540,912	

In the firſt column are ſtated periods of $27\frac{1}{2}$ years; in the ſecond are our numbers, at each period, as they will be if we proceed on our actual ſtock; and in the third are what they would be, at the ſame periods, were we to ſet out from the double of our preſent ſtock. I have taken the term of four millions and a half of inhabitants for example's ſake only. Yet I am perſuaded it is a greater number than the country ſpoken of, conſidering how much inarable land it contains, can clothe and feed, without a material change in the quality of their diet. But are there no inconveniences to be thrown into the ſcale againſt the advantage expected from a multiplication of numbers by the importation of foreigners? It is for the happineſs of thoſe united in ſociety to harmonize as much as

Digitized by Google

as poſſible in matters which they muſt of neceſſity tranſact together. Civil government being the ſole object of forming ſocieties, its adminiſtration muſt be conducted by common conſent. Every ſpecies of government has its ſpecific principles. Ours perhaps are more peculiar than thoſe of any other in the univerſe. It is a compoſition of the freeſt principles of the Engliſh conſtitution, with others derived from natural reaſon. To theſe nothing can be more oppoſed than the maxims of abſolute monarchies. Yet, from ſuch, we are to expect the greateſt number of emigrants. They will bring with them the principles of the governments they leave, imbibed in their early youth; or, if able to throw them off, it will be in exchange for an unbounded licentiouſneſs, paſſing, as is uſual, from one extreme to another. It would be a miracle were they to ſtop preciſely at the point of temperate liberty. Theſe principles, with their language, they will tranſmit to their children. In proportion to their numbers, they will ſhare with us the legiſlation. They will infuſe into it their ſpirit, warp and bias its directions, and render it a heterogeneous, incoherent, diſtracted maſs. I may appeal to experience, during the preſent conteſt, for a verification of theſe conjectures. But, if they be not certain in event, are they not poſſible, are they not probable? Is it not ſafer to wait with patience 27 years and three months longer, for the attainment of any degree of population deſired or expected? May not our gov-

Digitized by Google

ernment be more homogeneous, more peaceable, more durable? Suppose 20 millions of republican Americans thrown all of a sudden into France, what would be the condition of that kingdom? If it would be more turbulent, less happy, less strong, we may believe that the addition of half a million of foreigners to our present numbers would produce a similar effect here. If they come of themselves, they are entitled to all the rights of citizenship: but I doubt the expediency of inviting them by extraordinary encouragements. I mean not that these doubts should be extended to the importation of useful artificers. The policy of that measure depends on very different considerations. Spare no expense in obtaining them. They will after a while go to the plough and the hoe; but, in the mean time, they will teach us something we do not know. It is not so in agriculture. The indifferent state of that among us does not proceed from a want of knowledge merely; it is from our having such quantities of land to waste as we please. In Europe the object is to make the most of their land, labor being abundant: here it is to make the most of our labor, land being abundant.

It will be proper to explain how the numbers for the year 1782 have been obtained; as it was not from a perfect census of the inhabitants. It will at the same time develope the proportion between the free inhabitants and slaves. The following return of taxable articles for that year was given in.

53,289

Digitized by Google

53,289 free males above 21 years of age.
211,698 ſlaves of all ages and ſexes.
23,766 not diſtinguiſhed in the returns, but ſaid to be tytheable ſlaves.
195,439 horſes.
609,734 cattle.
5,126 wheels of riding-carriages.
191 taverns.

There were no returns from the 8 counties of Lincoln, Jefferſon, Fayette, Monongalia, Yohogania, Ohio, Northampton, and York. To find the number of ſlaves which ſhould have been returned inſtead of the 23,766 tytheables, we muſt mention that ſome obſervations on a former cenſus had given reaſon to believe that the numbers above and below ſixteen years of age were equal. The double of this number, therefore, to wit, 47,532 muſt be added to 211,698, which will give us 259,230 ſlaves, of all ages and ſexes. To find the number of free inhabitants, we muſt repeat the obſervation, that thoſe above and below 16 are nearly equal. But as the number 53,289 omits the males below 16 and 21 we muſt ſupply them from conjecture. On a former experiment it had appeared that about one third of our militia, that is, of the males between 16 and 50, were unmarried. Knowing how early marriage takes place here, we ſhall not be far wrong in ſuppoſing that the unmarried part of our militia are thoſe between 16 and 21. If there be young men who do not marry till after 21, there are many

Digitized by Google

many who marry before that age. But as men above 50 were not included in the militia, we will ſuppoſe the unmarried, or thoſe between 16 and 21, to be one fourth of the whole number above 16, then we have the following calculation:

53,289 free males above 21 years of age.
17,763 free males between 16 and 21.
71,052 free males under 16.
142,104 free males of all ages.

284,208 free inhabitants of all ages.
259,230 ſlaves of all ages.

543,438 inhabitants, excluſive of the 8 counties from which were no returns. In theſe 8 counties in the years 1779 and 1780, were 3,161 militia. Say then,

3,161 free males above the age of 16.
3,161 ditto under 16.
6,322 free females.

12,644 free inhabitants in theſe 8 counties. To find the number of ſlaves, ſay, as 284,208 to 259,230, ſo is 12,644 to 11,532. Adding the third of theſe numbers to the firſt, and the fourth to the ſecond, we have,

296,852 free inhabitants.
270,762 ſlaves.

567,614 inhabitants of every age, ſex, and condition.

Digitized by Google

tion. But 296,852, the number of free inhabitants, are to 270,762, the number of ſlaves, nearly as 11 to 10. Under the mild treatment our ſlaves experience, and their wholeſome, though coarſe, food, this blot in our country increaſes as faſt, or faſter, than the whites. During the regal government, we had at one time obtained a law, which impoſed ſuch a duty on the importation of ſlaves, as amounted nearly to a prohibition, when one inconſiderate aſſembly, placed under a peculiarity of circumſtances repealed the law. This repeal met a joyful ſanction from the then ſovereign, and no devices, no expedients, which could ever after be attempted by the ſubſequent aſſemblies, and they ſeldom met without attempting them, could ſucceed in getting the royal aſſent to a renewal of the duty. In the very firſt ſeſſion held under the republican government, the aſſembly paſſed a law for the perpetual prohibition of the importation of ſlaves. This will in ſome meaſure ſtop the increaſe of this great political and moral evil, while the minds of our citizens may be ripening for a complete emancipation of human nature.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY IX.

THE number and condition of the militia and regular troops, and their pay?

The following is a ſtate of the militia, taken from returns of 1780 and 1781, except in thoſe counties marked with an aſteriſk, the returns from which are ſomewhat older.

Every able bodied freeman, between the ages of 16 and 50 is enrolled in the militia. Thoſe of every county are formed into companies, and theſe again into one or more battalions, according to the number in the county. They are commanded by colonels, and other ſubordinate officers, as in the regular ſervice. In every county is a county-lieutenant, who commands the whole militia of his county, but ranks only as a colonel in the field. We have no general officers always exiſting. Theſe are appointed occaſionally, when an invaſion or inſurrection happens, and their commiſſion determines with the occaſion. The governor is head of the military, as well as civil power. The law requires every militia man to provide himſelf, with the arms uſual in the regular ſervice. But this injunction was always indifferently complied with, and the arms they had have been ſo frequently called for to arm the regulars, that in the lower parts of the country they are entirely diſarmed. In the middle

Digitized by Google

Situation.	Counties.	Militia.
Westward of the Alleghany. 4458.	Lincoln	600
	Jefferson	300
	Fayette	156
	Ohio	
	Monongalia	*1000
	Washington	*829
	Montgomery	1071
	Greenbriar	502
Between the Alleghaney & Blue ridge. 7673.	Hampshire	930
	Berkley	*1100
	Frederic	1143
	Shenando	*925
	Rockingham	875
	Augusta	1375
	Rockbridge	*625
	Botetourt	*700
Between the Blue ridge and Tide waters. 18,828.	Loudoun	1746
	Faquier	1078
	Culpepper	1513
	Spotsylvania	480
	Orange	*600
	Louisa	603
	Goochland	*550
	Fluvanna	*396
	Albermarle	873
	Amherst	896
	Buckingham	*625
	Bedford	1300
	Henry	1004
	Pittsylvania	*725
	Halifax	*1139
	Charlotte	612
	Prince Edward	589
	Cumberland	408
	Powhatan	330
	Amelia	*1125
	Lunenburg	677
	Mecklinburg	1100
	Brunswic	559

Situation.		Counties.	Miltia.
On the Tide Waters, and in that Parallel. 19,012.	Between James River & Carolina. 6959.	Greensville	500
		Dinwiddie	*750
		Chesterfield	655
		Prince George	382
		Surry	380
		Sussex	*700
		Southampton	874
		Isle of White	*600
		Nansemond	*644
		Norfolk	*880
		Princess Anne	*594
	Between James & York Rivers. 3009.	Henrico	619
		Hanover	706
		New Kent	*418
		Charles City	286
		James City	235
		Williamsburgh	129
		York	*244
		Warwick	*100
		Elisabeth City	182
	Between York & Rappahanoc 3269.	Caroline	805
		King William	436
		King & Queen	500
		Essex	468
		Middlesex	*210
		Gloucester	850
	Between Kappahanoc & Patowmac. 4137.	Fairfax	652
		Prince William	614
		Stafford	*500
		King George	483
		Richmond	412
		Westmoreland	544
		Northumberl.	630
		Lancaster	302
	Eastern Shore. 1638.	Accomak	*1208
		Northampton	*430
Whole Militia of the State			49,971

Digitized by Google

dle country a fourth or fifth part of them may have ſuch firelocks as they had provided to deſtroy the noxious animals which infeſt their farms; and on the weſtern ſide of the Blue ridge they are generally armed with rifles. The pay of our militia, as well as of our regulars, is that of the continental regulars. The condition of our regulars, of whom we have none but continentals, and part of a battalion of ſtate troops, is ſo conſtantly on the change, that a ſtate of it at this day would not be its ſtate a month hence. It is much the ſame with the condition of the other continental troops, which is well enough known.

QUERY X.

THE marine?

Before the preſent invaſion of this ſtate by the Britiſh under the command of General Philips, we had three veſſels of 16 guns, 1 of 14, five ſmall gallies and two or three armed boats. They were generally ſo badly manned as ſeldom to be in condition for ſervice. Since the perfect poſſeſſion of our rivers aſſumed by the enemy, I believe we are left with a ſingle armed boat only.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY XI.

A DESCRIPTION of the Indians eſtabliſhed in that ſtate?

When the firſt effectual ſettlement of our colony was made, which was in 1607, the country from the ſea-coaſt to the mountains, and from Patowmac to the moſt ſouthern waters of James River, was occupied by upwards of forty different tribes of Indians. Of theſe the *Powhatans*, the *Mannahoacs*, and *Monacans*, were the moſt powerful. Thoſe between the ſea-coaſt and falls of the rivers, were in amity with one another, and attached to the *Powhatans* as their link of union. Thoſe between the falls of the rivers and the mountains, were divided into two confederacies; the tribes inhabiting the head waters of Patowmac and Rappahannoc being attached to the *Mannahoacs*; and thoſe on the upper parts of James River to the *Monacans*. But the *Monacans* and their friends were in amity with the *Mannahoacs* and their friends and waged joint and perpetual war againſt the *Powhatans*. We are told that the *Powhatans*, *Mannahoacs*, and *Monacans*, ſpoke languages ſo radically different, that interpreters were neceſſary when they tranſacted buſineſs. Hence we may conjecture, that

Digitized by Google

was not the case between all the tribes, and probably that each spoke the language of the nation to which it was attached; which we know to have been the case in many particular instances. Very possibly there may have been anciently three different stocks, each of which multiplying in a long course of time, had separated into so many little societies. This practice results from the circumstance of their having never submitted themselves to any laws, any coercive power, any shadow of government. Their only controls are their manners, and that moral sense of right and wrong, which, like the sense of tasting and feeling, in every man makes a part of his nature. An offence against these is punished by contempt, by exclusion from society, or, where the case is serious, as that of murder, by the individuals whom it concerns. Imperfect as this species of coercion may seem, crimes are very rare among them; insomuch that were it made a question, whether no law as among the savage Americans, or too much law, as among the civilized Europeans, submits man to the greatest evil, one who has seen both conditions of existence would pronounce it to be the last: and that the sheep are happier of themselves, than under the care of the wolves. It will be said, that great societies cannot exist without government. The savages therefore break them into small ones.

The territories of the *Powhatan* confederacy, south of the Pawtomac, comprehended about 8000 square miles,

Digitized by Google

	Chief Towns.	Warriors. 1607	Warriors. 1669	
rge	About General Washington's	40		
	Patowmac creek	200		By the name of Matchotics. U. MatchodicNanzaticos. Nanzatico. Appamatox. Matox.
	About Lamb creek	20	60	
nd	Above Leeds town	—		
	Nomony River	100		
	Rappahanoc creek	100	30	
ond	Moratico River	80	40	By the name of Totuskeys.
	Coan River	30		
	Wicocomico River	130	[illegible]	
	Corotoman	30		
	Port tobacco creek	150	60	
	- - - - -	30	20	
	Romuncock	300	50	
	About Rosewell	40		
	Turk's ferry. Grimesby	55		
	- - - - -	60		
	Orapaks	250	60	
	Powhatan. Mayo's	40	10	
	Arrohatocs	30		
	Weynoke	100	15	
ity	Sandy point	40		
	Chiskiac	45	15	
	Roscows	20		
	Bermuda hundred	60	50	1669
	About Upper Chipoak	25	3 Pohics	Nottoways
	Warrasqueoc			Meherrics 90
	About the mouth of West branch	200	45	Tuteloes 50
	About Lynhaven River	100		
on	Accohanoc River	40		
	About Cheriton's	80		

EAST.

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

Digitized by Google

miles, 30 tribes, and 2400 warriors. Capt. Smith tells us, that within 60 miles of James town were 5000 people, of whom 1500 were warriors. From this we find the proportion of their warriors to their whole inhabitants, was as 3 to 10. The *Powhatan* confederacy then would consiſt of about 8000 inhabitants, which was one for every ſquare mile; being about the twentieth part of our preſent population in the ſame territory, and the hundredth of that of the Britiſh iſlands.

Beſides theſe, were the *Nottoways*, living on Nottoway River, the *Meherrins* and *Tuteloes* on Meherrin River, who were connected with the Indians of Carolina, probably with the Chowanocs.

The preceding table contains a ſtate of theſe ſeveral tribes, according to their confederacies and geographical ſituation, with their numbers when we firſt became acquainted with them, where theſe numbers are known. The numbers of them are again ſtated as they were in the year 1669, when an attempt was made by the aſſembly to enumerate them. Probably the enumeration is imperfect, and in ſome meaſure conjectural, and that a further ſearch into the records would furniſh many more particulars. What would be the melancholy ſequel of their hiſtory, may however be argued from the cenſus of 1669; by which we diſcover that the tribes therein enumerated were, in the ſpace of 62 years, reduced to about one-third of their former numbers. Spirituous liquors, the ſmall-

pox,

Digitized by Google

pox, war and an abridgement of territory, to a people who lived principally on the ſpontaneous productions of nature, had committed terrible havoc among them, which generation under the obſtacles oppoſed to it among them, was not likely to make good. That the lands of this country were taken from them by conqueſt, is not ſo general a truth as is ſuppoſed. I find in our hiſtorians and records, repeated proofs of purchaſe, which cover a conſiderable part of the lower country; and many more would doubtleſs be found on further ſearch. The upper country we know has been acquired altogether by purchaſes made in the moſt unexceptionable form.

Weſtward of all theſe tribes, beyond the mountains, and extending to the great lakes, were the *Maſſawomees*, a moſt powerful confederacy, who harraſſed unremittingly the *Powhatans and Manahoacs*. Theſe were probably the anceſtors of tribes known at preſent by the name of the *Six Nations*.

Very little can now be diſcovered of the ſubſequent hiſtory of theſe tribes ſeverally. The *Chickahominies* removed about the year 1661, to Mattapony River. Their chief, with one from each of the tribes of the Pamunkies and Mattaponies, attended the treaty of Albany in 1685. This ſeems to have been the laſt chapter in their hiſtory. They retained however their ſeparate name ſo late as 1705, and were at length blended with the Pamunkies and Mattaponies, and exiſt at preſent only under their names. There remain

of

Digitized by Google

of the *Mattaponies* three or four men only, and they have more negro than Indian blood in them. They have loſt their language, have reduced themſelves by voluntary ſales, to about fifty acres of land, which lie on the river of their own name, and have from time to time been joining the Pamunkies, from whom they are diſtant but 10 miles. The *Pamunkies* are reduced to about 10 or 12 men, tolerably pure from mixture with other colors. The older ones among them preſerve their language in a ſmall degree, which are the laſt veſtiges on earth, as far as we know, of the Powhatan language. They have about 300 acres of very fertile land, on Pamunkey River, ſo encompaſſed by water that a gate ſhuts in the whole. Of the *Nottoways*, not a male is left. A few women conſtitute the remains of that tribe. They are ſeated on the Nottoway River in Southampton county, on very fertile lands. At a very early period, certain lands were marked out and appropriated to theſe tribes, and were kept from encroachment by the authority of the laws. They have uſually had truſtees appointed, whoſe duty was to watch over their intereſts, and guard them from inſult and injury.

The *Manacans* and their friends, better known latterly by the name of the *Tuſcaroras*, were probably connected with the Maſſawomecs, or Five Nations. For though we are* told their languages were ſo different that the intervention of interpreters was neceſſary

* Smith.

Digitized by Google

ſary between them, yet do we alſo* learn that the Erigas, a nation formerly inhabiting on the Ohio, were of the ſame original ſtock with the Five Nations, and that they partook alſo of the Tuſcarora language. Their dialects might, by long ſeparation, have become ſo unlike as to be unintelligible to one another. We know that in 1712, the Five Nations received the Tuſcaroras into their confederacy, and made them the Sixth Nation. They received the Meherrins and Tuteloes alſo into their protection: and it is moſt probable, that the remains of many other of the tribes, of whom we find no particular account, retired weſtwardly in like manner, and were incorporated with one or other of the weſtern tribes. (5)

I know of no ſuch thing exiſting as an Indian monument: for I would not honor with that name arrow points, ſtone hatchets, ſtone pipes, and half-ſhapen images. Of labor on the large ſcale, I think there is no remain as reſpectable as would be a common ditch for the draining of lands, unleſs indeed it would be the Barrows, of which many are to be found all over in this country. Theſe are of different ſizes, ſome of them conſtructed of earth, and ſome of looſe ſtones. That they were repoſitories of the dead, has been obvious to all: but on what particular occaſion conſtructed, was a matter of doubt. Some have thought they covered the bones of thoſe who have fallen in battles fought on the ſpot of interment. Some

* Evans.

Digitized by Google

Some aſcribed them to the cuſtom, ſaid to prevail among the Indians, of collecting, at certain periods the bones of all their dead, whereſoever depoſited at the time of death. Others again ſuppoſed them the general ſepulchres for towns, conjectured to have been on or near theſe grounds; and this opinion was ſupported by the quality of the lands in which they are found, (thoſe conſtructed of earth being generally in the ſofteſt and moſt fertile meadow-grounds on river ſides) and by a tradition, ſaid to be handed down from the aboriginal Indians, that, when they ſettled in a town, the firſt perſon who died was placed erect, and earth put about him, ſo as to cover and ſupport him; that when another died, a narrow paſſage was dug to the firſt, the ſecond reclined againſt him, and the cover of earth replaced, and ſo on. There being one of theſe in my neighborhood, I wiſhed to ſatisfy myſelf whether any, and which of theſe opinions were juſt. For this purpoſe I determined to open and examine it thoroughly. It was ſituated on the low grounds of the Rivanna, about two miles above its principal fork, and oppoſite to ſome hills, on which had been an Indian town. It was of a ſpheriodical form, of about 40 feet diameter at the baſe, and had been of about twelve feet altitude, though now reduced by the plough to ſeven and a half, having been under cultivation about a dozen years. Before this it was covered with trees of twelve inches diameter, and round the baſe was an excavation of five feet depth and

Digitized by Google

width,

width, from whence the earth had been taken of which the hillock was formed, I firſt dug ſuperficially in ſeveral parts of it, and came to collections of human bones, at different depths, from ſix inches to three feet below the ſurface. Theſe were lying in the utmoſt confuſion, ſome vertical, ſome oblique, ſome horizontal, and directed to every point of the compaſs, entangled and held together in cluſters by the earth. Bones of the moſt diſtant parts were found together, as, for inſtance, the ſmall bones of the foot in the hollow of the ſcull; many ſculls would ſometimes be in contact, lying on the face, on the ſide, on the back, top or bottom, ſo as, on the whole, to give the idea of bones emptied promiſcuouſly from a bag or baſket, and covered over with earth, without any attention to their order. The bones of which the greateſt numbers remained, were ſculls, jaw-bones, teeth, the bones of the arms, thighs, legs, feet, and hands. A few ribs remained, ſome vertebræ of the neck and ſpine, without their proceſſes, and one inſtance only of the *bone which ſerves as a baſe to the vertebral column. The ſculls were ſo tender, that they generally fell to pieces on being touched. The other bones were ſtronger. There were ſome teeth which were judged to be ſmaller than thoſe of an adult; a ſcull which on a ſlight view, appeared to be that of an infant, but it fell to pieces on being taken out, ſo as to prevent ſatisfactory examination; a rib, and

* The os ſacrum.

Digitized by Google

and a fragment of the under jaw of a perſon about half grown; another rib of an infant, and part of the jaw of a child, which had not cut its teeth. This laſt furniſhing the moſt deciſive proof of the burial of children here, I was particular in my attention to it. It was part of the right half of the under jaw. The proceſſes by which it was articulated to the temporal bones, were entire, and the bone itſelf firm to where it had been broken off, which, as nearly as I could judge, was about the place of the eye-tooth. Its upper edge, wherein would have been the ſockets of the teeth, was perfectly ſmooth. Meaſuring it with that of an adult, by placing their hinder proceſſes together, its broken end extended to the penultimate grinder of the adult. This bone was white, all the others of a ſand color. The bones of infants being ſoft, they probably decay ſooner, which might be the cauſe ſo few were found here. I proceeded then to make a perpendicular cut through the body of the barrow, that I might examine its internal ſtructure. This paſſed about three feet from its centre, was opened to the former ſurface of the earth, and was wide enough for a man to walk through and examine its ſides. At the bottom, that is, on the level of the circumjacent plain, I found bones; above theſe a few ſtones, brought from a cliff a quarter of a mile off, and from the river, one eighth of a mile off; then a large interval of earth, then a ſtratum of bones, and ſo on. At one end of the ſection were four ſtrata of bones plain-

Digitized by Google

ly distinguishable; at the other, three; the strata in one part not ranging with those in another. The bones nearest the surface were least decayed. No holes were discovered in any of them, as if made with bullets, arrows, or other weapons. I conjectured that in this barrow might have been a thousand skeletons. Every one will readily seize the circumstances above related, which militate against the opinion, that it covered the bones only of persons fallen in battle; and against the tradition also, which would make it the common sepulchre of a town, in which the bodies were placed upright, and touching each other. Appearances certainly indicate that it has derived both origin and growth from the accustomary collection of bones, and deposition of them together; that the first collection had been deposited on the common surface of the earth, a few stones put over it, and then a covering of earth, that the second had been laid on this, had covered more or less of it in proportion to the number of bones, and was then also covered with earth; and so on. The following are the particular circumstances which give it this aspect. 1. The number of bones. 2. Their confused position. 3. Their being in different strata. 4. The strata in one part having no correspondence with those in another. 5. The different states of decay in these strata which seem to indicate a difference in the time of inhumation. 6. The existence of infant bones among them.

But on whatever occasion they may have been made,

Digitized by Google

made, they are of conſiderable notoriety among the Indians: for a party paſſing, about thirty years ago, through the part of the country where this barrow is, went through the woods directly to it, without any inſtructions or enquiry, and having ſtaid about it ſome time, with expreſſions which were conſtrued to be thoſe of ſorrow, they returned to the high road, which they had left about half a dozen miles to pay this viſit, and purſued their journey. There is another barrow much reſembling this, in the low grounds of the ſouth branch of Shenandoah where it is croſſed by the road leading from the Rockfiſh gap to Staunton, both of theſe have within theſe dozen years, been cleared of their trees and put under cultivation, are much reduced in their height, and ſpread in width by the plough, and will probably diſappear in time. There is another on a hill in the Blue ridge of mountains, a few miles north of Wood's gap, which is made up of ſmall ſtones thrown together. This has been opened and found to contain human bones, as the others do. There are alſo many others in other parts of the country.

Great queſtion has ariſen from whence came thoſe aboriginals of America? Diſcoveries, long ago made, were ſufficient to ſhow that a paſſage from Europe to America was always practicable, even to the imperfect navigation of antient times. In going from Norway to Iceland, from Iceland to Groenland, from Groenland to Labrador, the firſt traject is the wideſt:

and

Digitized by Google

and this having been practiſed from the earlieſt times of which we have any account of that part of the earth, it is not difficult to ſuppoſe that the ſubſequent trajects may have been ſometimes paſſed. Again, the late diſcoveries of Captain Cook, coaſting from Kamſchatka to California, have proved that if the two continents of Aſia and America be ſeparated at all, it is only by a narrow ſtreight. So that from this ſide alſo, inhabitants may have paſſed into America: and the reſemblance between the Indians of America and the eaſtern inhabitants of Aſia, would induce us to conjecture, that the former are the deſcendants of the latter, or the latter of the former: excepting indeed the Eſkimaux, who, from the ſame circumſtances of reſemblance, and from indentity of language, muſt be derived from the Groenlanders, and theſe probably from ſome of the northern parts of the old continent. A knowledge of their ſeveral languages would be the moſt certain evidence of their derivation which could be produced. In fact, it is the beſt proof of the affinity of nations which ever can be referred to. How many ages have elapſed ſince the Engliſh, the Dutch, the Germans, the Swiſs the Norwegians, Danes and Swedes have ſeparated from their common ſtock? Yet how many more muſt elapſe before the proofs of their common origin, which exiſt in their ſeveral languages, will diſappear? It is to be lamented then, very much to be lamented, that we have ſuffered ſo many of the Indian tribes already to extinguiſh,

Digitized by Google

guiſh, without our having previouſly collected and depoſited in the records of literature, the general rudiments at leaſt of the languages they ſpoke. Were vocabularies formed of all the languages ſpoken in North and South America, preſerving their appellations of the moſt common objects in nature, of thoſe which muſt be preſent to every nation barbarous or civilized, with the inflections of their nouns and verbs, their principles of regimen and concord, and theſe depoſited in all the public libraries, it would furniſh opportunities to thoſe ſkilled in the languages of the old world to compare them with theſe, now, or at any future time, and hence to conſtruct the beſt evidence of the derivation of this part of the human race.

But imperfect as is our knowledge of the tongues ſpoken in America, it ſuffices to diſcover the following remarkable fact. Arranging them under the radical ones to which they may be palpably traced and doing the ſame by thoſe of the red men of Aſia, there will be found probably twenty in America, for one in Aſia, of thoſe radical languages, ſo called, becauſe, if they were ever the ſame they have loſt all reſemblance to one another. A ſeparation into dialects may be the work of a few ages only, but for two dialects to recede from one another till they have loſt all veſtiges of their common origin, muſt require an immenſe courſe of time; perhaps not leſs than many people give to the age of the earth. A greater number of thoſe radical changes of language having taken place

Digitized by Google

place among the red men of America, proves them of greater antiquity than thoſe of Aſia.

I will now proceed to ſtate the nations and numbers of the Aborigines which ſtill exiſt in a reſpectable and independent form. And as their undefined boundaries would render it difficult to ſpecify thoſe only which may be within any certain limits, and it may not be unacceptable to preſent a more general view of them, I will reduce within the form of a catalogue all thoſe within, and circumjacent to, the United States, whoſe names and numbers have come to my notice. Theſe are taken from four different liſts, the firſt of which was given in the year 1759 to general Stanwix by George Croghan, deputy agent for Indian affairs under Sir William Johnſon; the ſecond was drawn up by a French trader of conſiderable note, reſident among the Indians many years, and annexed to colonel Bouquet's printed account of his expedition in 1764. The third was made out by captain Hutchins, who viſited moſt of the tribes, by order, for the purpoſe of learning their numbers in 1768. And the fourth by John Dodge, an Indian trader, in 1779, except the numbers marked,* which are from other information.

TRIBES.

Digitized by Google

Northward and westward of the United States.

Oſwegatchies	—	—	100	At Swagatchy, on the river St. Laurence.
Connaedagoes	—	—	300	Near Montreal.
Cohunnewagoes	—	200		
Orandoes	—	—	100	Near Trois Rivieres.
Abenakies	—	350	150	Near Trois Rivieres.
Little Algonkins	—	—	100	Near Trois Rivieres.
Michmacs	—	700	—	River St. Laurence.
Amelifties	—	550	—	River St. Laurence.
Chalas	—	130	—	River St. Laurence.
Nipiſſins	—	400	—	Towards the heads of the Ottawas river.
Algonquins	—	300	—	Towards the heads of the Ottawas river.
Round heads	—	2500	—	Riviere aux Tetes boules on the E. ſide of Lake Superior.
Meſſaſagues	—	2000	—	Lakes Huron and Superior.
Chriſtinaux. Kris	—	3000	—	Lake Chriſtinaux.
Aſſinaboes	—	1500	—	Lake Aſſinaboes.
Blancs, or Barbus	—	1500	—	
Sioux of the Meadows		2500		
Sioux of the Woods	10,000	1800	10,000	On the heads of the Miſſiſippi and weſtward of that river.
Sioux		—		
Ajoues	—	1100	—	North of the Padoucas.
Panis. White	—	2000	—	South of the Miſſouri.
Panis. Freckled	—	1700	—	South of the Miſſouri.
Padoucas	—	500	—	South of the Miſſouri.
Grandes eaux	—	1000	—	
Canſes	—	1600	—	South of the Miſſouri.
Oſages	—	600	—	South of the Miſſouri.
Miſſouris	400	3000	—	On the river Miſſouri.
Arkanzas	—	2000	—	On the river Arkinzas.
Caouitas	—	700	—	Eaſt of the Alibamous.

TRIBES.	Croghan. 1759.	Bouquet. 1764.	Hutchins. 1768.	Dodge. 1779.	Where they reside.
Mohocks	—	—	160	100	Mohocks river. [Susquehanna.
Onèidas	—	—	300	400	East side of Oneida Lake and head branches of
Tuscaròras	—	—	200		Between the Oneidas and Onondagoes.
Onondàgoes	—	1550	260	230	Near Onondago L. [Susquehanna.
Cayùgas	—	—	200	220	On the Cayuga Lake near the N. branch of
Sènecas	—	—	1900	650	On the waters of Susquehanna, of Ontario, and the heads of the Ohio.
Aughquàghas	—	—	150	—	East branch of Susquehanna, and on Aughquagah.
Nanticoes	—	—	100	—	Utsanango, Chaghtnet, and Owegy, on the East branch of Susquehanna.
Mohiccons	—	—	100	—	In the same parts.
Conòies	—	—	30	—	In the same parts.
Sapòonies	—	—	30	—	At Diahago and other villages up the North branch of Susquehanna.
Mùnsies	—	—	150	*150	At Diahago and other villages up the North branch of Susquehanna.
Delawares, or Linnelinopies	—	—	150	*500	At Diahago and other villages up the North branch of Susquehanna.
Delawares, or Linnelinopies	600	600	600		Between Ohio and Lake Erie and the branches of Beaver creek, Cayahoga and Muskingum.
Shàwnees	500	400	300	300	Sioto and the branches of Muskingum.
Mingoes	—	—	—	60	On a branch of Sioto.

Within the limits of the United States.

Within the Limits of the United States.

TRIBES.	Croghan. 1759.	Bouquet. 1764.	Hutchins. 1768.	Dodge. 1779.	Where they reside.
Ouiſconſings	—	550	—	—	Ouiſconſing River.
Kickapous	600	300	—	250	On lake Michigan, and between that and the Miſſiſippi.
Otogamies. Foxes	—	—	—	—	
Maſcoutens	—	500	4000	—	
Miſcothins	—	—		—	
Outimacs	—	—	—	—	
Muſquakies	200	250	—	250	
Soix. Eaſtern	—	—	—	500	On the eaſtern heads of the Miſſiſippi, and the iſlands of lake Superior.
			Galphin. 1768.		
Cherokees	1500	2500	3000	—	Weſtern parts of North-Carolina.
Chickaſaws	—	750	500	—	Weſtern parts of Georgia.
Catawbas	—	150	—	—	On the Catawba River in South-Carolina.
Chacktaws	2000	4500	6000	—	Weſtern parts of Georgia.
Upper Creeks	—	—	3000	—	Weſtern parts of Georgia.
Lower Creeks	—	1180			
Natches	—	150	—	—	
Alibamous	—	600	—	—	Alibama River, in the weſtern parts of Georgia.

Digitized by Google

	TRIBES.	Croghan. 1759.	Bouquet. 1764.	Hutchins. 1768.	Dodge. 1779.	Where they reside.
Within the Limits of the United States.	Mohiccons	—	—		*60	
	Cohunnewagos	—	—	300	—	Near Sandusky.
	Wyandots	300	300	250	180	Near fort St. Joseph's and Detroit.
	Wyandots					
	Twightwees	300	—	250	—	Miami River, near fort Miami.
	Miamis	—	350	—	300	Miami River, about fort St. Joseph.
	Ouiatonons	200	400	300	*300	On the banks of the Wabash, near fort Ouiatonon.
	Piankishas	300	259	300	*400	On the banks of the Wabash, near fort Ouiatonon.
	Shákirs	—	—	200	—	On the banks of the Wabash, near fort Ouiatonon.
	Kaskaskias	—	600	300	—	Near Kaskaskia. [Mitchigamis?
	Illinois	400		309	—	Near Cahokia. Query, If not the same with the
	Piorias	—	800	—	—	On the Illinois River, called Pianrias, but supposed to mean Piorias.
	Pouteotamies	—	350	300	450	Near fort St. Joseph's and fort Detroit.
	Ottawas	—	—	550	*300	Near fort St. Joseph's and fort Detroit.
	Chippawas	—	—	200	—	On Saguinam bay of lake Huron.
	Ottawas	—	—		—	On Saguinam bay of lake Huron.
	Chippawas	—	—	400	—	Near Michillimackinac.
	Ottawas	2000	5900	250	5450	Near Michillimackinac.
	Chippawas			400		Near fort St. Mary's on lake Superior.
	Chippawas	—	—	—	—	Several other villages along the banks of lake Superior. Numbers unknown.
	Chippawas.	—	—	—	—	Near Puans bay on lake Michigan.
	Shakies	200	400	550	—	Near Puans bay on lake Michigan.
	Mynonàmies	—	—	—	—	Near Puans bay on lake Michigan.

Digitized by Google

The following tribes are alſo mentioned:

Croghan's Catal.	Lezar,	400	From the mouth of Ohio to the mouth of Wabaſh.
	Webings,	200	On the Miſſiſippi below the Shakies.
	Ouiatoys	4000	On white creek, a branch of the Miſſiſippi.
	Grand Tuc.		
	Linways,	1000	On the Miſſiſippi.
Bouquet's.	Les Puans,	700	Near Puans Bay.
	Folle Avoine,	350	Near Puans Bay.
	Ounnakim	300	Conjectured to be Tribes of the Creeks.
	Chiacaneſſou,	350	
	Machecous,	600	
	Souikilas,	200	
Dodge's.	Mineamis,	2000	North-weſt of L. Michigan, to the heads of Miſſiſippi, and up to L. Superior.
	Pinkiſhas,	800	On and near the Wabaſh towards the Illinois.
	Maſcoutins,		
	Vermillions,		

But apprehending theſe might be different appellations for ſome of the tribes already enumerated, I have not inſerted them in the table, but ſtate them ſeparately as worthy of further enquiry. The variations obſervable in numbering the ſame tribe may ſometimes be aſcribed to imperfect information, and ſometimes to a greater or leſs comprehenſion of ſettlements under the ſame name. (7)

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY XII.

A NOTICE of the counties, cities, townſhips, and villages?

The counties have been enumerated under query IX. They are 74 in number, of very unequal ſize and population. Of theſe 35 are on the tide waters, or in that parallel; 23 are in the midlands, between the tide waters and the Blue ridge of mountains; 8 between the Blue ridge and Alleghaney; and 8 weſtward of the Alleghaney.

The ſtate, by another diviſion, is formed into pariſhes, many of which are commenſurate with the counties: but ſometimes a county comprehends more than one pariſh, and ſometimes a pariſh more than one county. This diviſion had relation to the religion of the ſtate, a parſon of the Anglican church, with a fixed ſalary, having been heretofore eſtabliſhed in each pariſh. The care of the poor was another object of the parochial diviſion.

We have no townſhips. Our country being much interſected with navigable waters, and trade brought generally to our doors, inſtead of our being obliged to go in queſt of it, has probably been one of the cauſes why we have no towns of any conſequence. Williamſburgh, which till the year 1780, was the ſeat of our government, never contained above 1800 inhabitants;

Digitized by Google

habitants; and Norfolk the moſt populous town we ever had, contained but 6000. Our towns, but more properly our villages or hamlets, are as follows.

On *James River* and its waters, Norfolk, Portſmouth, Hampton, Suffolk, Smithfield, Williamſburgh, Peterſburgh, Richmond the ſeat of our government, Mancheſter, Charlottſville, New-London.

On *York River* and its waters, York, Newcaſtle, Hanover.

On *Rappahannoc*, Urbanna, Portroyal, Frederickſburgh, Falmouth.

On *Patowmac* and its waters, Dumfries, Colcheſter, Alexandria, Wincheſter, Staunton.

On *Ohio*, Louiſville.

There are other places at which, like ſome of the foregoing, the *laws* have ſaid there ſhall be towns; but *nature* has ſaid there ſhall not, and they remain unworthy of enumeration. *Norfolk* will probably be the emporium for all the trade of the Cheſapeak bay and its waters; and a canal of 8 or 10 miles will bring to it all that of Albemarle ſound and its waters. Secondary to this place, are the towns at the head of the tide waters, to wit, Peterſburgh on Appomattox. Richmond on James River. Newcaſtle on York River. Alexandria on Patowmac, and Baltimore on Patapſco. From theſe the diſtribution will be to ſubordinate ſituations in the country. Accidental

Digitized by Google

tal circumſtances however may control the indications of nature, and in no inſtance do they do it more frequently than in the riſe and fall of towns.

QUERY XIII.

THE conſtitution of the ſtate, and its ſeveral charters?

Queen Elizabeth by her letters-patent, bearing date March 25, 1584, licenſed Sir Walter Raleigh to ſearch for remote heathen lands, not inhabited by chriſtian people, and granted to him, in fee ſimple, all the ſoil within 200 leagues of the places where his people ſhould within 6 years make their dwellings or abidings; reſerving only to herſelf and her ſucceſſors, their allegiance and one-fifth part of all the gold and ſilver ore they ſhould obtain. Sir Walter immediately ſent out two ſhips which viſited Wococon iſland in North-Carolina, and the next year diſpatched ſeven with 107 men, who ſettled in Roanoke iſland, about latitutde 35° 50′. Here Okiſko, King of the Weopomeiocs, in a full council of his people is ſaid to have acknowledged himſelf the homager of the Queen of England, and after her, of Sir Walter Raleigh. A ſupply of 50 men were ſent in 1586, and 150 in 1587. With theſe laſt, Sir Walter ſent a governor, appointed him 12 aſſiſtants, and gave them

Digitized by Google

them a charter of incorporation, and inſtructed them to ſettle on Cheſapeak bay. They landed however at Hattoraſk. In 1588, when a fleet was ready to ſail with a new ſupply of coloniſts and neceſſaries, they were detained by the Queen to aſſiſt againſt the Spaniſh armada. Sir Walter having expended 40,000l. in theſe enterpriſes, obſtructed occaſionally by the crown without a ſhilling of aid from it, was under a neceſſity of engaging others to adventure their money. He therefore, by deed bearing date the 7th of March 1589, by the name of Sir Walter Raleigh, chief governor of Aſſamàcomòc, (probably Acomàc,) alias Wingadacoia, alias Virginia, granted to Thomas Smith and others, in conſideration of their adventuring certain ſums of money, liberty of trade to his new country, free from all cuſtoms and taxes for ſeven years, excepting the fifth part of the gold and ſilver ore to be obtained; and ſtipulated with them, and the other aſſiſtants, then in Virginia, that he would confirm the deed of incorporation which he had given in 1587, with all the prerogatives, juriſdictions, royalties and privileges granted to him by the Queen. Sir Walter, at different times, ſent five other adventurers hither, the laſt of which was in 1602; for in 1603 he was attainted, and put into cloſe impriſonment, which put an end to his cares over his infant colony. What was the particular fate of the coloniſts he had before ſent and ſeated, has never been known: whether they were murdered, or incorporated with the ſavages.

Some

Digitized by Google

Some gentlemen and merchants, ſuppoſing that by the attainder of Sir Walter Raleigh the grant to him was forfeited, not enquiring over carefully whether the ſentence of an Engliſh court could affect lands not within the juriſdiction of that court, petitioned king James for a new grant of Virginia to them. He accordingly executed a grant to Sir Thomas Gates and others bearing date the 9th of March 1607, under which, in the ſame year a ſettlement was effected at James town and ever after remained. Of this grant however no particular notice need be taken, as it was ſuperſeded by letters-patent of the ſame king, of May 23, 1609 to the Earl Saliſbury and others, incorporating them by the name of 'the treaſurer and com-'pany of adventurers, and planters of the city of 'London for the firſt colony in Virginia,' granting to them and their ſucceſſors all the lands in Virginia from Point Comfort along the ſea-coaſt to the northward 200 miles, and from the ſame point along the ſea-coaſt to the ſouthward 200 miles, and all the ſpace from this precinct on the ſea-coaſt up into the land, weſt and north-weſt from ſea to ſea, and the iſlands within one hundred miles of it, with all the commodities, juriſdictions, royalties, privileges, franchiſes and pre-eminencies within the ſame, and thereto and thereabouts, by ſea and land, appertaining in as ample manner as had before been granted to any adventurer: to be held of the king and his ſucceſſors, in common ſoccage, yielding one fifth part of the gold and ſilver ore

Digitized by Google

ore to be therein found, for all manner of ſervices; eſtabliſhing a council in England for the direction of the enterpriſe, the members of which were to be choſen and diſplaced by the voice of the majority of the company of adventurers, and were to have the nomination and revocation of governors, officers, and miniſters, which by them ſhould be thought needful for the colony, the power of eſtabliſhing laws and forms of government and magiſtracy, obligatory not only within the colony, but alſo on the ſeas in going and coming to and from it: authoriſing them to carry thither any perſons who ſhould conſent to go, freeing them for ever from all taxes and impoſitions on any goods or merchandiſe on importations into the colony, or exportation out of it, except the five per cent. due on all goods imported into the Britiſh dominions, according to the ancient trade of merchants; which five percent. only being paid they might, within 13 months re-export the ſame goods into foreign parts, without any cuſtom, tax, or other duty to the king or any of his officers or deputies; with powers of waging war againſt thoſe who ſhould annoy them; giving to the inhabitants of the colony all the rights of natural ſubjects, as if born and abiding in England; and declaring that theſe letters ſhould be conſtrued, in all doubtful parts, in ſuch manner as ſhould be moſt for the benefit of the grantees.

Afterwards on the 12th of March 1612, by other letters-patent, the king added to his former grants, all

Digitized by Google

islands in any part of the ocean between the 30th and 41st degrees of latitude, and within 300 leagues of any of the parts before granted to the treasurer and company, not being possessed or inhabited by any other christian prince or state, nor within the limits of the northern colony.

In pursuance of the authorities given to the company by these charters, and more especially of that part in the charter of 1609, which authorised them to establish a form of government, they on the 24th of July 1621, by charter under their common seal, declared that from thenceforward there should be two supreme councils in Virginia, the one to be called the council of state, to be placed and displaced by the treasurer, council in England, and company, from time to time, whose office was to be that of assisting and advising the governor; the other to be called the general assembly, to be convened by the governor once yearly or oftener, which was to consist of the council of state, and two burgesses out of every town, hundred or plantation, to be respectively chosen by the inhabitants. In this all matters were to be decided by the greater part of the votes present, reserving to the governor a negative voice; and they were to have power to treat, consult, and conclude all emergent occasions concerning the public weal, and to make laws for the behoof and government of the colony, imitating and following the laws and policy of England as nearly as might be, providing that these laws should

Digitized by Google

have

have no force till ratified in a general quarter court of the company in England and returned under their common seal, and declaring that, after the government of the colony should be well framed and settled, no orders of the council in England should bind the colony unless ratified in the said general assembly. The king and company quarrelled, and by a mixture of law and force, the latter were ousted of all their rights, without retribution, after having expended 100,000l. in establishing the colony, without the smallest aid from government. King James suspended their powers by proclamation of July [illegible], 1624, and Charles I. took the government into is own hands. Both sides had their partizans in the colony; but in truth the people of the colony in general thought themselves little concerned in the dispute. There being three parties interested in these several charters, what passed between the first and second it was thought could not affect the third. If the king seized on the powers of the company, they only passed into other hands, without increase or diminution, while the rights of the people remained as they were. But they did not remain so long. The northern parts of their country were granted away to the lords Baltimore and Fairfax, the first of these obtaining also the rights of separate jurisdiction and government. And in 1650 the parliament, considering itself as standing in the place of their deposed king, and as having succeeded to all his powers, without as well as within

the

Digitized by Google

the realm, began to assume a right over the colonies, passing an act for inhibiting their trade with foreign nations. This succession to the exercise of kingly authority gave the first color for parliamentary interference with the colonies, and produced that fatal precedent which they continued to follow after they had retired, in other respects, within their proper functions. When this colony, therefore, which still maintained its opposition to Cromwell and the parliament, was induced in 1651 to lay down their arms, they previously secured their most essential rights, by a solemn convention, which having never been seen in print, I will here insert literally from the records.

'ARTICLES agreed on & concluded at James Cittie in Virginia for the surrendering and settling of 'that plantation under the obedience & government 'of the Comon wealth of England by the Commissioners of the Councill of state by authoritie of the 'parliamt. of England & by the grand assembly of the 'Governour, Councill & Burgesses of that countrey.

'First it is agreed and contested that the plantation 'of Virginia, and all the inhabitants thereof shall be 'and remain in due obedience and subjection to the 'Comon wealth of England according to the laws 'there established, and that this submission and subscription bee acknowledged a voluntary act not forced nor constrained by a conquest upon the country, 'and that they shall have and enjoy such freedoms and priviledges as belong to the free borne people of 'England,

Digitized by Google

'England, and that the former government by the 'Commissions and Instructions be void and null.

'2ly, Secondly that the Grand assembly as formerly shall convene and transact the affairs of Virginia wherein nothing is to be acted of done contrarie 'to the government of the Comon wealth of England & the laws there established.

'3ly, That there shall be a full and total remission 'and indempnitie of all acts, words, or writeings done 'or spoken againſt the parliament of England in relation to the same.

'4ly, That Virginia shall have and enjoy the antient bounds and Lymitts granted by the charters 'of former kings, and that we shall seek a new charter from the parliament to that purpose againſt any 'that have intrencht upon the rights thereof.

'5ly, That all the patents of land granted under 'the colony seal by any of the precedent governours 'shall be and remain in their full force & strength.

'6ly, That the priviledge of having fiftie acres of 'land for every person transported in that colonie 'shall continue as formerly granted.

'7ly, That the people of Virginia have free trade 'as the people of England do enjoy to all places and 'with all nations according to the lawes of that Comon wealth, and that Virginia shall enjoy all privi'ledges equal with any English plantations in America.

'8ly, That Virginia shall be free from all taxes,

'customs

Digitized by Google

'cuſtoms & impoſitions whatſoever, & none to be impoſed on them without conſent of the Grand aſſembly; and ſoe that neither ffortes nor caſtles bee erected or garriſons maintained without their conſent.

'9ly, That noe charge ſhall be required from this countrey in reſpect of this preſent ffleet.

'10ly, That for the future ſettlement of the countrey in their due obedience, the Engagement ſhall be tendered to all the inhabitants according to act of parliament made to that purpoſe, that all perſons who ſhall refuſe to ſubſcribe the ſaid engagement, ſhall have a yeare's time if they pleaſe to remove themſelves & their eſtates out of Virginia, and in the mean time during the ſaid yeare to have equall juſtice as formerly.

'11ly, That the uſe of the booke of common prayer ſhall be permitted for one yeare enſuinge with reference to the conſent of the major part of the pariſhes, provided that thoſe which relate to kingſhipp or that government be not uſed publiquely, and the continuance of miniſters in their places, they not miſdemeaning themſelves, and the payment of their accuſtomed dues and agreements made with them reſpectively ſhall be left as they now ſtand during this enſuing yeare.

'12ly, That no man's cattell ſhall be queſtioned as the companies unleſs ſuch as have been entruſted with them or have diſpoſed of them without order.

'13ly, That all ammunition, powder & armes, other

Digitized by Google

'other than for private use, shall be delivered up, & 'securitie being given to make satisfaction for it.

'14ly, That all goods already brought hither by 'the Dutch or others which are now on shoar shall be 'free from surprizall.

'15ly, That the quittrents granted unto us by the late kinge for seven yeares be confirmed.

'16ly, That the commissioners for the parliament 'subscribeing theese articles engage themselves & the 'honour of parliament for the full performance there- 'of: and that the present governour & the councill '& the burgesses do likewise subscribe and engage 'the whole colony on their parts.

RICH. BENNETT.——Seale.
WM. CLAIBORNE.——Seale.
EDMUND CURTIS.——Seale.

'Theise articles were signed & sealed by the Com- 'missioners of the Councill of state for the Comon 'wealth of England the 12th day of March 165$\frac{1}{2}$.'

Then the following articles stipulated by the gover- nor and council, which relate merely to their own persons and property, and then the ensuing instru- ment:

'An act of indempnitie made att the surrender of 'the countrey.

'Whereas by the authoritie of the parliament wee 'the commissioners appointed by the councill of state 'authorized thereto having brought a fleet & force

'before

Digitized by Google

'before James cittie in Virginia to reduce that collo-
'nie under the obedience of the Comon wealth of Eng-
'land, and findeing force raised by the Governour &
'countrey to make opposition against the said fleet
'whereby assured danger appearinge of the ruin & de-
'struction of the plantation, for preservation whereof
'the Burgesses of all the several plantations being
'called to advise and assist therein, uppon long & se-
'rious debate, and in sad contemplation of the great
'miseries and certaine destruction which were soe
'nearely hovering over the whole countrey; wee the
'said commissioners have thought fitt & and conde-
'scended and granted to signe and confirme under
'our hands, seales & by our oath, Articles bearinge
'date with theise presents, and do further declare that
'by the authoritie of the parliament and Comon wealth
'of England derived unto us their commissioners, that
'according to the articles in generall wee have granted
'an act of indemptnitie and oblivion to all the inhabi-
'tants of this colloney from all words, actions, or wri-
'tings that have been spoken acted or writt against
'the parliament or Comon wealth of England or any
'other person from the beginning of the world to this
'daye. And this wee have done that all the inhab-
'itants of the collonie may live quietly & securely un-
'der the Comon wealth of England. And wee do
'promise that the parliament and comon wealth of
'England shall confirm & make good all those trans-
'actions of ours. Witness our hands & seales this

12th

Digitized by Google

'12th of March 1651. Richard Bennett—Seale.—'Wm. Claiborne—Seale.—Edm. Curtis—Seale.'

The colony ſuppoſed, that, by this ſolemn convention, entered into with arms in their hands, they had ſecured the antient limits* of their country, its free trade,† its exemption from taxation‡ but by their own aſſembly, and excluſion of military force§ from among them. Yet in every of theſe points was this convention violated by ſubſequent kings and parliaments, and other infractions of their conſtitution, equally dangerous committed. Their general aſſembly, which was compoſed of the council of ſtate and burgeſſes, ſitting together and deciding by plurality of voices, was ſplit into two houſes, by which the council obtained a ſeparate negative on their laws. Appeals from their ſupreme court, which had been fixed by law in their general aſſembly, were arbitrarily revoked to England, to be there heard before the king and council. Inſtead of four hundred miles on the ſea-coaſt, they were reduced, in the ſpace of thirty years, to about one hundred miles. Their trade with foreigners was totally ſuppreſſed, and when carried to Great-Britain, was there loaded with impoſts. It is unneceſſary, however, to glean up the ſeveral inſtances of injury, as ſcattered through America and Britiſh hiſtory, and the more eſpecially as, by paſſing on to the acceſſion of the preſent king, we ſhall find ſpecimens of them all, aggravated, multiplied and

* Art. 4. † Art. 7. ‡ Art. 8. § Art. 8.

Digitized by Google

crouded within a ſmall compaſs of time, ſo as to evince a fixed deſign of conſidering our rights natural, conventional and chartered as mere nullities. The following is an epitome of the firſt fifteen years of his reign. The colonies were taxed internally and externally; their eſſential intereſts ſacrificed to individuals in Great-Britain; their legiſlatures ſuſpended; charters annulled; trials by juries taken away; their perſons ſubjected to tranſportation acroſs the Atlantic, and to trial before foreign judicatories: their ſupplications for redreſs thought beneath anſwer; themſelves publiſhed as cowards in the councils of their mother country and courts of Europe; armed troops ſent among them to enforce ſubmiſſion to theſe violences; and actual hoſtilities commenced againſt them. No alternative was preſented but reſiſtance, or unconditional ſubmiſſion. Between theſe could be no heſitation. They cloſed in the appeal to arms. They declared themſelves independent ſtates. They confederated together into one great republic; thus ſecuring to every ſtate the benefit of an union of their whole force. In each ſtate ſeparately a new form of government was eſtabliſhed. Of ours particularly the following are the outlines. The executive powers are lodged in the hands of a governor, choſen annually, and incapable of acting more than three years in ſeven. He is aſſiſted by a council of eight members. The judiciary powers are divided among ſeveral courts, as will be hereafter explained. Legiſlation

Digitized by Google

lation is exerciſed by two houſes of aſſembly, the one called the houſe of delegates, compoſed of two members from each county, choſen annually by the citizens poſſeſſing an eſtate for life in 100 acres of uninhabited land, or 25 acres with a houſe on it, or in a houſe or lot in ſome town; the other called the ſenate, conſiſting of 24 members, choſen quadrenially by the ſame electors, who for this purpoſe are diſtributed into 24 diſtricts. The concurrence of both houſes is neceſſary to the paſſage of a law. They have the appointment of the governor and council, the judges of the ſuperior courts, auditors, attorney-general, treaſurer, regiſter of the land office, and delegates to congreſs. As the diſmemberment of the ſtate had never had its confirmation, but, on the contrary, had always been the ſubject of proteſtation and complaint, that it might never be in our power to raiſe ſcruples on that ſubject, or to diſturb the harmony of our new confederacy, the grants to Maryland, Pennſylvania, and the two Carolinas, were ratified.

This conſtitution was formed when we were new and unexperienced, in the ſcience of government. It was the firſt too which was formed in the whole United States. No wonder then that time and trial have diſcovered very capital defects in it.

1. The majority of the men in the ſtate, who pay and fight for its ſupport, are unrepreſented in the legiſlature, the roll of freeholders entitled to vote, not including

Digitized by Google

including generally the half of those on the roll of the militia, or of the tax-gatherers,

2. Among those who share the representation, the shares are very unequal. Thus the county of Warwick, with only 100 fighting men, has an equal representation with the county of Loudon, which has 1746. So that every man in Warwick has as much influence in the government as 17 men in Loudon. But lest it should be thought that an equal interspersion of small among large counties, through the whole state, may prevent any danger of injury to particular parts of it, we will divide it into districts, and show the proportions of land, of fighting men, and of representation in each.

	Square miles.	Fighting men.	Delegates.	Senators.
Between the sea-coast and falls of the rivers	*11,205	19,012	71	13
Between the falls of the rivers and the Blue ridge of mountains	18,759	18,828	46	8
Between the Blue ridge and the Alleghaney	11,911	7,673	16	2
Between the Alleghaney and Ohio	†79,650	4,458	16	2
Total	121,525	49,971	149	24

An inspection into this table will supply the place of commentaries on it. It will appear at once that 19,000 men, living below the falls of the rivers possess half the senate, and want four members only of possessing

* Of these 542 are on the Eastern shore.

† Of these, 22,616 are eastward of the meridian of the north of the Great Kanhaway.

Digitized by Google

ſeſſing a majority of the houſe of delegates; a want more than ſupplied by the vicinity of their ſituation to the ſeat of our government, and of courſe the greater degree of convenience and punctuality with which their members may add will attend in the legiſlature. Theſe 19,000 therefore, living in one part of the country, give law to upwards of 30,000 living in another, and appoint all their chief officers executive and judiciary. From the difference of their ſituation and circumſtances, their intereſts will often be very different.

3. The ſenate, by its conſtitution, too homogenious with the houſe of delegates. Being choſen by the ſame electors at the ſame time, and out of the ſame ſubjects, the choice falls of courſe on men of the ſame deſcription. The purpoſe of eſtabliſhing different houſes of legiſlation is to introduce the influence of different intereſts or different principles. Thus in Great-Britain it is ſaid their conſtitution relies on the houſe of commons for honeſty, and the lords for wiſdom; which would be a rational reliance if honeſty were to be bought with money, and if wiſdom were hereditary. In ſome of the American ſtates the delegates and ſenators are ſo choſen, as that the firſt repreſent the perſons, and the ſecond the property of the ſtate. But with us, wealth and wiſdom have equal chance for admiſſion into both houſes. We do not therefore derive from the ſeparation of our legiſlature into two houſes, thoſe benefits which a proper complication

Digitized by Google

plication of principles is capable of producing, and thoſe which alone can compenſate the evils which may be produced by their diſſentions.

4. All the powers of government, legiſlative, executive, and judiciary, reſult to the legiſlative body. The concentrating theſe in the ſame hands is preciſely the definition of deſpotic government. It will be no alleviation that theſe powers will be exerciſed by a plurality of hands, and not by a ſingle one: 173 deſpots would ſurely be as oppreſſive as one. Let thoſe who doubt it turn their eyes on the republic of Venice. As little will it avail us that they are choſen by ourſelves. An *elective deſpotiſm* was not the government we fought for; but one which ſhould not only be founded upon free principles, but in which the powers of government ſhould be ſo divided and balanced among ſeveral bodies of magiſtracy, as that no one could tranſcend their legal limits, without being effectually checked and reſtrained by the others. For this reaſon that convention, which paſſed the ordinance of government, laid its foundation on this baſis, that the legiſlative, executive and judiciary departments ſhould be ſeparate and diſtinct, ſo that no perſon ſhould exerciſe the powers of more than one of them at the ſame time. But no barrier was provided between theſe ſeveral powers. The judiciary and executive members were left dependant on the legiſlative for their ſubſiſtence in office, and ſome of them for their continuance in it. If therefore the legiſlature aſſumes

Digitized by Google

assumes executive and judiciary powers, no opposition is likely to be made; nor, if made, can it be effectual; because in that case they may put their proceedings into the form of an act of assembly, which will render them obligatory on the other branches. They have accordingly, in many instances, decided rights which should have been left to judiciary controversy: and the direction of the executive, during the whole time of their session, is becoming habitual and familiar. And this is done with no ill intention. The views of the present members are perfectly upright. When they are led out of their regular province, it is by art in others, and inadvertence in themselves. And this will probably be the case for some time to come. But it will not be a very long time. Mankind soon learn to make interested uses of every right and power which they possess or may assume. The public money and public liberty, intended to have been deposited with three branches of magistracy but found inadvertently to be in the hands of one only, will soon be discovered to be sources of wealth and dominion to those who hold them; distinguished too by this tempting circumstance, that they are the instrument, as well as the object of acquisition. With money we will get men, said Cæsar, and with men we will get money. Nor should our assembly be deluded by the integrity of their own purposes, and conclude that these unlimited powers will never be abused, because themselves are not disposed to abuse them. They should look forward

Digitized by Google

forward to a time; and that not a diſtant one, when corruption in this, as in the country from which we derived our origin, will have ſeized the heads of government, and be ſpread by them through the body of the people; when they will purchaſe the voices of the people, and make them pay the price. Human nature is the ſame on every ſide of the Atlantic, and will be alike influenced by the ſame cauſes. The time to guard againſt corruption and tyranny, is before they ſhall have gotten hold on us. It is better to keep the wolf out of the fold, than to truſt to drawing his teeth and talons after he ſhall have entered. To render theſe conſiderations the more cogent, we muſt obſerve in addition.

5. That the ordinary legiſlature may alter the conſtitution itſelf. On the diſcontinuance of the aſſemblies, it became neceſſary to ſubſtitute in their place ſome other body, competent to the ordinary buſineſs of government, and to the calling forth the powers of the ſtate for the maintenance of our oppoſition to Great-Britain. Conventions were therefore introduced, conſiſting of two delegates from each county, meeting together and forming one houſe, on the plan of the former houſe of burgeſſes, to whoſe places they ſucceeded. Theſe were at firſt choſen anew for every particular ſeſſion. But in March 1775 they recommended to the people to chooſe a convention, which ſhould continue in office a year. This was done accordingly in April 1775, and in the July following that

Digitized by Google

that convention paſſed an ordinance for the election of delegates in the month of April annually. It is well known, that in July 1775, a ſeparation from Great-Britain and eſtabliſhment of republican government had never yet entered into any perſon's mind. A convention therefore choſen under that ordinance, cannot be ſaid to have been choſen for the purpoſes which certainly did not exiſt in the minds of thoſe who paſſed it. Under this ordinance, at the annual election in April 1776, a convention for the year was choſen. Independence, and the eſtabliſhment of a new form of government, were not even yet the objects of the people at large. One extract from the pamphlet called Common Senſe had appeared in the Virginia papers in February, and copies of the pamphlet itſelf had got into a few hands. But the idea had not been opened to the maſs of the people in April, much leſs can it be ſaid that they had made up their minds in its favor. So that the electors of April 1776, no more than the legiſlators of July 1775, not thinking of independence and a permanent republic, could not mean to veſt in theſe delegates powers of eſtabliſhing them, or any authorities other than thoſe of the ordinary legiſlature. So far as a temporary organization of government was neceſſary to render our oppoſition energetic, ſo far their organization was valid. But they received in their creation no powers but what were given to every legiſlature before and ſince. They could not therefore paſs an act tranſcendant

Digitized by Google

ſcendant to the powers of other legiſlatures. If the preſent aſſembly paſs an act, and declare it ſhall be irrevocable by ſubſequent aſſemblies, the declaration is merely void, and the act repealable, as other acts are. So far, and no farther authoriſed, they organized the government by the ordinance entitled a conſtitution or form of government. It pretends to no higher authority than the other ordinances of the ſame ſeſſion; it does not ſay that it ſhall be perpetual; that it ſhall be unalterable by other legiſlatures; that it ſhall be tranſcendant above the powers of thoſe, who they knew would have equal power with themſelves. Not only the ſilence of the inſtrument is a proof they thought it would be alterable, but their own practice alſo; for this very convention, meeting as a houſe of delegates in general aſſembly with the ſenate in the autumn of that year, paſſed acts of aſſembly in contradiction to their ordinance of government: and every aſſembly from that time to this has done the ſame. I am ſafe therefore in the poſition, that the conſtitution itſelf is alterable by the ordinary legiſlature. Though this opinion ſeems founded on the firſt elements of common ſenſe, yet is the contrary maintained by ſome perſons. 1. Becauſe ſay they, the conventions were veſted with every power neceſſary to make effectual oppoſition to Great-Britain. But to complete this argument, they muſt go on, and ſay further, that effectual oppoſition could not be made to Great-Britain, without eſtabliſhing a form of govern-

ment

Digitized by Google

ment perpetual and unalterable by the legiſlature; which is not true. An oppoſition which at ſome time or other was to come to an end, could not need a perpetual inſtitution to carry it on: and a government, amendable as its defects ſhould be diſcovered, was as likely to make effectual reſiſtance, as one which ſhould be unalterably wrong. Beſides, the aſſemblies were as much veſted with all powers requiſite for reſiſtance as the conventions were. If therefore theſe powers included that of modelling the form of government in the one caſe, they did ſo in the other. The aſſemblies then as well as the conventions may model the government; that is they may alter the ordinance of government. 2. They urge, that if the convention had meant that this inſtrument ſhould be alterable, as their other ordinances were, they would have called it an ordinance: but they have called it a *conſtitution*, which ex vi termini means 'an act above the power of the ordinary legiſlature.' I anſwer, that *conſtitutio*, *conſtitutium*, *ſtatutum*, *lex*, are convertible terms. '*Conſtitutio* dicitur jus quod a principe conditure.' *Conſtitutum*, quad ab imperatoribus reſcriptum ſtatutumve eſt.' *Statutum* idem quod lex.' Calvini Lexicon juridicum. *Conſtitution* and *ſtatute* were original terms of the* civil law, and from thence introduced by eccleſiaſtics into the Engliſh

* To *bid*, to *ſet*, was the ancient legiſlative word of the Engliſh. Ll. Hlotharii & Edrici. Ll. Inae. Ll. Eadwerdi. Ll. Aathelſtani.

Digitized by Google

Engliſh law. Thus in the ſtatute 25 Hen. 8. c. 19. §. 1. 'Conſtitutions and ordinances' are uſed as ſynonymous. The term *conſtitution* has many other ſignifications in phyſics and in politics; but in juriſprudence, whenever it is applied to any act of the legiſlature, it invariably means a ſtatute, law, or ordinance, which is the preſent caſe. No inference then of a different meaning can be drawn from the adoption of this title; on the contrary we might conclude, that by their affixing to it a term ſynonymous with ordinance or ſtatute. But of what conſequence is their meaning, where their power is denied? If they meant to do more than they had power to do, did this give them power? it is not the name, but the authority that renders an act obligatory. Lord Coke ſays, 'an article of the ſtatute 11 R. 2. c. 5. that no perſon 'ſhould attempt to revoke any ordinance then made, 'is repealed, for that ſuch reſtraint is againſt the juriſdiction and power of the parliament,' 4. Inſt. 42. and again, 'though divers parliaments have attempted 'to reſtrain ſubſequent parliaments, yet could they 'never effect it; for the latter parliament hath ever 'power to abrogate, ſuſpend, qualify, explain, or 'make void the former in the whole or any part 'thereof, notwithſtanding any words of reſtraint, prohibition, or penalty, in the former: for it is a max-'im in the lews of the parliament, quad leges poſte-'riores priores contrarias abrogant.' 4. Inſt. 43.— To get rid of the magic ſuppoſed to be in the word

conſtitution,

Digitized by Google

conſtitution, let us tranſlate it into its definition as given by thoſe who think it above the power of the law; and let us ſuppoſe the convention inſtead of ſaying, 'we the ordinary legiſlature eſtabliſh a *conſtitution*,' had ſaid, 'we the ordinary legiſlature eſtabliſh an act *above the power of the ordinary legiſlature*.' Does not this expoſe the abſurdity of the attempt? 3. But, ſay they, the people have acquieſced, and this has given it an authority ſuperior to the laws. It is true, that the people did not rebel againſt it: and was that a time for the people to riſe in rebellion? Should a prudent acquieſcence, at a critical time, be conſtrued into a confirmation of every illegal thing done through that period? Beſides, why ſhould they rebel? At an annual election, they had choſen delegates for the year, to exerciſe the ordinary powers of legiſlation, and to manage the great conteſt in which they were engaged. Theſe delegates thought the conteſt would be beſt managed by an organized government. They therefore, among others, paſſed an ordinance of government. They did not preſume to call it perpetual and unalterable. They well knew they had no power to make it ſo: that our choice of them had been for no ſuch purpoſe, and at a time when we could have no ſuch purpoſe in contemplation. Had an unalterable form of government been meditated, perhaps we ſhould have choſen a different ſet of people. There was no cauſe then

Digitized by Google

then for the people to riſe in rebellion. But to what dangerous lengths will this argument be lead? Did the acquieſcence of the colonies under the various acts of power exerciſed by Great-Britain in our infant ſtate, confirm theſe acts, and ſo far inveſt them with the authority of the people as to render them unalterable, and our preſent reſiſtance wrong? On every unauthoritative exerciſe of power by the legiſlature, muſt the people riſe in rebellion, or their ſilence be conſtrued into a ſurrender of that power to them? If ſo, how many rebellions ſhould we have had already? One certainly for every ſeſſion of aſſembly. The other ſtates in the union have been of opinion, that to render a form of government unalterable by ordinary acts of aſſembly, the people muſt delegate perſons with ſpecial powers. They have accordingly choſen ſpecial conventions to form and fix their governments. The individuals then who maintain the contrary opinion in this country, ſhould have the modeſty to ſuppoſe it poſſible that they may be wrong and the reſt of America right. But if there be only a poſſibility of their being wrong, if only a plauſible doubt remains of the validity of the ordinance of government, is it not better to remove that doubt, by placing it on a bottom which none will diſpute? If they be right we ſhall only have the unneceſſary trouble of meeting once in convention. If they be wrong, they expoſe us to the hazard of having no fundamental rights at all. True

it

Digitized by Google

it is, this is no time for deliberating on forms of government. While an enemy is within our bowels, the firſt object is to expel him. But when this ſhall be done, when peace ſhall be eſtabliſhed, and leiſure given us for intrenching within good forms the rights for which we have bled, let no man be found indolent enough to decline a little more trouble for placing them beyond the reach of queſtion. If any thing more be requiſite to produce a conviction of the expediency of calling a convention at a proper ſeaſon to fix our form of government, let it be the reflection,

6. That the aſſembly exerciſes a power of determining a quorum of their own body which may legiſlate for us. After the eſtabliſhment of the new form they adhere to the *Lex majoris partis*, founded in* common law as well as common right. It is the† natural law of every aſſembly of men, whoſe numbers are not fixed by any other law. They continued for ſome time to require the preſence of a majority of their whole number, to paſs an act. But the Britiſh parliament fixes its own quorum: our former aſſemblies fixed their own quorum: and one precedent in favor of power is ſtronger than an hundred againſt it. The houſe of delegates‡ therefore have† lately voted that, during the preſent dangerous invaſion,

*Bro. abr. Corporations. 31. 34. Hakewell, 93.
† Puff. Off. hom. l. 2. c. 6. §. 12.
‡ June 4, 1781.

Digitized by Google

ſion, forty members ſhall be a houſe to proceed to buſineſs. They have been moved to this by the fear of not being able to collect a houſe. But this danger could not authoriſe them to call that a houſe which was none: and if they may fix it at one number, they may at another, till it loſes its fundamental character of being a repreſentative body. As this vote expires with the preſent invaſion, it is probable the former rule will be permitted to revive: becauſe at preſent no ill is meant. The power however of fixing their own quorum has been avowed, and a precedent ſet. From forty it may be reduced to four, and from four to one: from a houſe to a committee, from a committee to a chairman or ſpeaker, and thus an oligarchy or monarchy be ſubſtituted under forms ſuppoſed to be regular. 'Omnia mala 'exempla ex bonis orta ſunt: ſed ubi imperium ad 'ignaros aut minus bonus pervenit, novum illud ex-'emplum ab dignis et idoneis ad indignos et non idon-'eos fertur.' When therefore it is conſidered, that there is no egal obſtacle to the aſſumption by the aſſembly of all the powers legiſlative, executive, and judiciary, and that theſe may come to the hands of the ſmalleſt rag of delegation, ſurely the people will ſay, and their repreſentatives, while yet they have honeſt repreſentatives, will adviſe them to ſay, that they will not acknowledge as laws any acts not conſidered and aſſented to by the major part of their delegates.

In enumerating the defects of the conſtitution, it would

Digitized by Google

would be wrong to count among them what is only the error of particular persons. In December 1776, our circumstances being much distressed, it was proposed in the house of delegates to create a *dictator*, invested with every power legislative, executive and judiciary, civil and military, of life and death, over our persons and over our properties: and in June 1781, again under calamity, the same proposition was repeated, and wanted a few votes only of being passed. One who entered into this contest from a pure love of liberty, and a sense of injured rights, who determined to make every sacrifice, and to meet every danger, for the re-establishment of those rights on a firm basis, who did not mean to expend his blood and substance for the wretched purpose of changing this master for that, but to place the powers of governing him in a plurality of hands of his own choice, so that the corrupt will of no one man might in future oppress him, must stand confounded and dismayed when he is told that a considerable portion of that plurality had meditated the surrender of them into a single hand, and, in lieu of a limited monarchy, to deliver him over to a despotic one! How must we find his efforts and sacrifices abused and baffled, if he may still by a single vote be laid prostrate at the feet of one man? In God's name from whence have they derived this power? Is it from our ancient laws? None such can be produced. Is it from any principle in our new constitution expressed or implied?

Digitized by Google

Every lineament of that expreſſed or implied, is in full oppoſition to it. Its fundamental principle is, that the ſtate ſhall be governed as a commonwealth. It provides a republican organization, proſcribes under the name of *prerogative* the exerciſe of all powers undefined by the laws; places on this baſis the whole ſyſtem of our laws; and by conſolidating them together, chooſes that ſhould be left to ſtand or fall together, never providing for any circumſtances, nor admitting that ſuch could ariſe, wherein either ſhould be ſuſpended, no, not for a moment. Our ancient laws expreſsly declare, that thoſe who are but delegates themſelves ſhall not delegate to other powers which require judgment and integrity in their exerciſe.—Or was this propoſition moved on a ſuppoſed right in the movers of abandoning their poſts in a moment of diſtreſs? The ſame laws forbid the abandonment of that poſt, even on ordinary occaſions; and much more a transfer of their powers into other hands and other forms, without conſulting the people. They never admit the idea that theſe, like ſheep or cattle, may be given from hand to hand without an appeal to their own will.—Was it from the neceſſity of the caſe? Neceſſities which diſſolve a government, do not convey its authority to an oligarchy or a monarchy. They throw back into the hands of the people, the powers they had delegated, and leave them as individuals to ſhift for themſelves. A leader may offer, but not impoſe himſelf nor be impoſed on them.

Digitized by Google

them. Much leſs can their necks be ſubmitted to his ſword, their breath to be held at his will or caprice. The neceſſity which ſhould operate theſe tremendous effects ſhould at leaſt be palpable and irreſiſtible. Yet in both inſtances, where it was feared, or pretended with us, it was belied by the event. It was belied too by the preceding experience of our ſiſter ſtates, ſeveral of whom had grappled through greater difficulties without abandoning their forms of government. When the propoſition was firſt made, Maſſachuſetts had found even the government of committees ſufficient to carry them through an invaſion. But we at the time of that propoſition were under no invaſion. When the ſecond was made, there had been added to this example thoſe of Rhode-Iſland, New-York, New-Jerſey, and Pennſylvania, in all of which the republican form had been found equal to the taſk of carrying them through the ſevereſt trials. In this ſtate alone did there exiſt ſo little virtue, that fear was to be fixed in the hearts of the people, and to become the motive of their exertions and the principle of their government? The very thought alone was treaſon againſt the people; was treaſon againſt mankind in general; rivetting forever the chains which bow down their necks, by giving to their oppreſſors a proof, which they would have trumpeted through the univerſe, of the imbecility of republican government, in times of preſſing danger, to ſhield them from harm. Thoſe who aſſume the right of giving

Digitized by Google

giving away the reins of government in any caſe, muſt be ſure that the herd, whom they hand on to the rods and hatchet of the dictator, will lay their heads on the block when he ſhall nod to them. But if our aſſemblies ſuppoſed ſuch a reſignation in the people, I hope they miſtook their character. I am of opinion, that the government, inſtead of being braced and invigorated for greater exertions under their difficulties, would have been thrown back upon the bungling machinery of country committees for adminiſtration, till a convention could have been called, and its wheels again ſet into regular motion. What a cruel moment was this for creating ſuch an embarraſſment, for putting to the proof the attachment of our countrymen to republican government! Thoſe who meant well, of the advocates for this meaſure, (and moſt of them meant well, for I know them perſonally, had been their fellow-laborer in the common cauſe, and had often proved the purity of their principles,) had been ſeduced in their judgment by the example of an ancient republic, whoſe conſtitution and circumſtances were fundamentally different. They had ſought this precedent in the hiſtory of Rome, where alone it was to be found, and where at length too it had proved fatal. They had taken it from a republic rent by the moſt bitter factions and tumults, where the government was of a heavy-handed unfeeling ariſtocracy, over a people ferocious, and rendered deſperate by poverty and wretchedneſs; tumults which could not be allayed

Digitized by Google

layed under the moſt trying circumſtances, but by the omnipotent hand of a ſingle deſpot. Their conſtitution, therefore allowed a temporary tyrant to be erected, under the name of a dictator; and that temporary tyrant after a few examples became perpetual.—They miſapplied this precedent to a people, mild in their diſpoſitions, patient under their trial, united for the public liberty, and affectionate to their leaders. But if from the conſtitution of the Roman government there reſulted to their ſenate a power of ſubmitting all their rights to the will of one man, does it follow, that the aſſembly of Virginia, have the ſame authority? What clauſe in our conſtitution has ſubſtituted that of Rome, by way of reſiduary proviſion, for all caſes not otherwiſe provided for? Or if they may ſtep ad libitum into any other form of government for precedents to rule us by, for what oppreſſion may not a precedent be found in this world of the bellum omnium in omnia?—Searching for the foundations of this propoſition, I can find none which may pretend a color of right or reaſon, but the defect before developed, that there being no barrier between the legiſlature, executive, and judiciary departments, the legiſlature may ſeize the whole: that having ſeized it, and poſſeſſing a right to fix their own quorum, they may reduce that quorum to one, whom they may call a chairman, ſpeaker, dictator, or by any other name they pleaſe.—Our ſituation is indeed perilous, and I hope my countrymen will be ſenſible of it, and

will

Digitized by Google

will apply, at a proper ſeaſon the proper remedy; which is a convention to fix the conſtitution, to amend its defects, to bind up the ſeveral branches of government by certain laws, which when they tranſgreſs their acts ſhall become nullities; to render unneceſſary an appeal to the people, or in other words a rebellion, on every infraction of their rights, on the peril that their acquieſcence ſhall be conſtrued into an intention to ſurrender thoſe rights.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY XIV.

THE adminiſtration of juſtice and the deſcription of the laws?

The ſtate is divided into counties. In every county are appointed magiſtrates, called juſtices of the peace, uſually from eight to thirty or forty in number, in proportion to the ſize of the county, of the moſt diſcreet and honeſt inhabitants. They are nominated by their fellows, but commiſſioned by the governor, and act without reward. Theſe magiſtrates have juriſdiction both criminal and civil. If the queſtion before them be a queſtion of law only, they decide on it themſelves: but if it be of fact, or of fact and law combined, it muſt be referred to a jury. In the latter caſe, of a combination of law and fact, it is uſual for the jurors to decide the fact, and to refer the law ariſing on it to the deciſion of the judges. But this diviſion of the ſubject lies with their diſcretion only. And if the queſtion relate to any point of public liberty, or if it be one of thoſe in which the judges may be ſuſpected of bias, the jury undertake to decide both law and fact. If they be miſtaken, a deciſion againſt right, which is caſual only, is leſs dangerous to the ſtate, and leſs afflicting to the loſer, than

Digitized by Google

than one which makes part of a regular and uniform ſyſtem. In truth it is better to toſs up croſs and pile in a cauſe, than to refer it to a judge whoſe mind is warped by any motive whatever, in that particular caſe. But the common ſenſe of twelve honeſt men gives ſtill a better chance of juſt deciſion, than the hazard of croſs and pile. Theſe judges execute their proceſs by the ſheriff or coroner of the county, or by conſtables of their own appointment. If any free perſon commit an offence againſt the commonwealth, if it be below the degree of felony, he is bound by a juſtice to appear before their court, to anſwer it on indictment or information. If it amount to felony, he is committed to jail, a court of theſe juſtices is called; if they on examination think him guilty, they ſend him to the jail of the general court, before which court he is to be tried firſt by a grand jury of 24, of whom 13 muſt concur in opinion: if they find him guilty, he is then tried by a jury of 12 men of the county where the offence was committed, and by their verdict, which muſt be unanimous, he is acquitted or condemned without appeal. If the criminal be a ſlave the trial by the county court is final. In every caſe however, except that of high treaſon, there reſides in the governor a power of pardon. In high treaſon, the pardon can only flow from the general aſſembly. In civil matters theſe juſtices have juriſdiction in all caſes of whatever value, not appertaining to the department of the admiralty.

This

Digitized by Google

This jurisdiction is two-fold. If the matter in dispute be of less value than four dollars and one-sixth, a single member may try it at any time and place within his county, and may award execution on the goods of the party cast. If it be of that or greater value, it is determinable before the county court, which consists of four at least of those justices, and assembles at the court-house of the county on a certain day in every month. From their determination, if the matter be of the value of ten pounds sterling, or concern the title or bounds of lands, an appeal lies to one of the superior courts.

There are three superior courts, to wit, the high court of chancery, the general court, and the court of admiralty. The first and second of these receive appeals from the county courts, and also have original jurisdiction, where the subject of controversy is of the value of ten pounds sterling, or where it concerns the title or bounds of land. The jurisdiction of the admiralty is original altogether. The high court of chancery is composed of three judges, the general court of five, and the court of admiralty of three. The two first hold their sessions at Richmond at stated times, the chancery twice in the year, and the general court twice for business civil and criminal, and twice more for criminal only. The court of admiralty sits at Williamsburgh whenever a controversy arises.

There is one supreme court, called the court of appeals, composed of the judges of the three superior

Digitized by Google

courts, aſſembling twice a year at ſtated times at Richmond. This court receives appeals in all civil caſes from each of the ſuperior courts, and determines them finally. But it has no original juriſdiction.

If a controverſy ariſe between two foreigners of a nation in alliance with the United States, it is decided by the conſul of their ſtate, or, if both parties chooſe it, by the ordinary courts of juſtice. If one of the parties only be ſuch a foreigner, it is triable before the courts of juſtice of the country. But if it ſhall have been inſtituted in a county court, the foreigner may remove it into the general court, or court of chancery, who are to determine it at their firſt ſeſſions, as they muſt alſo do if it be originally commenced before them. In caſes of life and death, ſuch foreigners have a right to be tried by a jury, the one half foreigners, the other natives.

All public accounts are ſettled with a board of auditors, conſiſting of three members, appointed by the general aſſembly, any two of whom may act. But an individual, diſſatisfied with the determination of that board, may carry his caſe into the proper ſuperior court.

A deſcription of the laws.

The general aſſembly was conſtituted, as has been already ſhewn, by letters-patent of March the 9th, 1607, in the 4th year of the reign of James the firſt. The laws of England ſeem to have been adopted by conſent of the ſettlers, which might eaſily enough be done

Digitized by Google

done whilst they were few and living all together, of such adoption however, we have no other proof than their practice till the year 1661, when they were expressly adopted by an act of the assembly, except so far as 'a difference of condition' rendered them inapplicable. Under this adoption, the rule, in our courts of judicature was, that the common law of England, and the general statutes previous to the 4th of James, were in force here; but that no subsequent statutes were, *unless we were named in them*, said the judges and other partisans of the crown, but *named or not named*, said those who reflected freely. It will be unnecessary to attempt a description of the laws of England, as that may be found in English publications. To those which were established here, by the adoption of the legislature, have been since added a number of acts of assembly passed during the monarchy, and ordinances of convention and acts of assembly enacted since the establishment of the republic. The following variations from the British model are perhaps worthy of being specified.

Debtors unable to pay their debts, and making faithful delivery of their whole effects, are released from confinement, and their persons for ever discharged from restraint for such previous debts: but any property they may afterwards acquire will be subject to their creditors.

The poor, unable to support themselves, are maintained by an assessment on the tytheable persons in their

Digitized by Google

their parish. This assessment is levied and administered by twelve persons in each parish, called vestrymen, originally chosen by the housekeepers of the parish, but afterwards filling vacancies in their own body by their own choice. These are usually the most discreet farmers, so distributed through the parish, that every part of it may be under the immediate eye of some one of them. They are well acquainted with the details and economy of private life, and they find sufficient inducements to execute their charge well, in their philanthropy, in the approbation of their neighbors, and the distinction which that gives them. The poor who have neither property, friends, nor strength to labor, are boarded in the houses of good farmers, to whom a stipulated sum is annually paid. To those who are able to help themselves a little, or have friends from whom they derive some succors, inadequate however to their full maintenance, supplementary aids are given which enable them to live comfortably in their own houses, or in the houses of their friends. Vagabonds without visible property or vocation, are placed in workhouses, where they are well clothed, fed, lodged, and made to labor. Nearly the same method of providing for the poor prevails through all our states; and from Savannah to Portsmouth you will seldom meet a beggar. In the larger towns indeed they sometimes present themselves. These are usually foreigners who have never obtained a settlement in any parish. I never saw a native American begging

Digitized by Google

begging in the ſtreets or highways. A Subſiſtence is eaſily gained here: and if, by misfortunes, they are thrown on the charities of the world, thoſe provided by their own country are ſo comfortable and ſo certain, that they never think of relinquiſhing them to become ſtrolling beggars. Their ſituation too, when ſick, in the family of a good farmer, where every member is emulous to do them kind offices, where they are viſited by all the neighbors, who bring them the little rarities which their ſickly appetites may crave, and who take by rotation the nightly watch over them, when their condition requires it, is without compariſon better than in a general hoſpital, where the ſick, the dying, and the dead are crammed together, in the ſame rooms, and often in the ſame beds. The diſadvantages, inſeparable from general hoſpitals, are ſuch as can never be counterpoiſed by all the regularities of medicine and regimen. Nature and kind nurſing ſave a much greater proportion in our plain way, at a ſmaller expenſe, and with leſs abuſe. One branch only of hoſpital inſtitution is wanting with us; that is, a general eſtabliſhment for thoſe laboring under difficult caſes of chirurgery. The aids of this art are not equivocal. But an able chirurgeon cannot be had in every pariſh. Such a receptacle ſhould therefore be provided for thoſe patients: but no others ſhould be admitted.

Marriages muſt be ſolemnized either on ſpecial licenſe, granted by the firſt magiſtrate of the county, on

Digitized by Google

on proof of the consent of the parent or guardian of either party under age, or after solemn publication, on three several Sundays, at some place of religious worship, in the parishes where the parties reside. The act of solemnization may be by the minister of any society of Christians, who shall have been previously licensed for this purpose by the court of the county. Quakers and Menonists however are exempted from all these conditions, and marriage amongst them is solemnized by the society itself.

A foreigner of any nation, not in open war with us, becomes naturalized by removing to the state to reside, and taking an oath of fidelity: and thereupon acquires every right of a native citizen: and citizens may divest themselves of that character, by declaring, by solemn deed, or in open court, that they mean to expatriate themselves, and no longer be citizens of this state.

Conveyances of land must be registered in the court of the county wherein they lie, or in the general court, or they are void, as to creditors, and subsequent purchasers.

Slaves pass by descent and dower as lands do. Where the descent is from a parent, the heir is bound to pay an equal share of their value in money to each of his brothers and sisters.

Slaves, as well as lands were entailable during the monarchy: but, by an act of the first republican assembly, all donees in tail, present and future, were vest-

ed

Digitized by Google

ed with the abſolute dominion of the entailed ſubject.

Bills of exchange, being proteſted, carry, 10 per cent. intereſt from their date.

No perſon is allowed, in any other caſe, to take more than five per cent. per annum ſimple intereſt for the loan of monies.

Gaming debts are made void, and monies actually paid to diſcharge ſuch debts (if they exceed 40 ſhillings) may be recovered by the payer within three months, or by any other perſon afterwards.

Tobacco, flour, beef, pork, tar, pitch, and turpentine muſt be inſpected by perſons publicly appointed, before they can be exported.

The erecting iron-works and mills is encouraged by many privileges; with neceſſary cautions however to prevent their dams from obſtructing the navigation of the water-courſes. The general aſſembly have on ſeveral occaſions ſhewn a great deſire to encourage the opening the great falls of James and Patowmac rivers. As yet, however, neither of theſe have been effected.

The laws have alſo deſcended to the preſervation and improvement of the races of uſeful animals, ſuch as horſes, cattle, deer; to the extirpation of thoſe which are noxious, as wolves, ſquirrels, crows, blackbirds; and to the guarding our citizens againſt infectious diſorders, by obliging ſuſpected veſſels coming into the ſtate, to perform quarantine, and by regulating the conſ of perſons having ſuch diſorders within the ſtate.

The

Digitized by Google

The mode of acquiring lands, in the earliest times of our settlement, was by petition to the general assembly. If the lands prayed for were already cleared of the Indian title, and the assembly thought the prayer reasonable, they passed the property by their vote to the petitioner. But if they had not yet been ceded by the Indians, it was necessary that the petitioner should previously purchase their right. This purchase the assembly verified, by inquiries of the Indian proprietors; and being satisfied of its reality and fairness, proceeded further to examine the reasonableness of the petition, and its consistence with policy; and according to the result, either granted or rejected the petition. The company also sometimes, though very rarely, granted lands, independently of the general assembly. As the colony increased, and individual applications for land multiplied, it was found to give too much occupation to the general assembly to inquire into and execute the grant in every special case. They therefore thought it better to establish general rules according to which all grants should be made, and to leave to the governor the execution of them, under these rules. This they did by what have been usually called the land laws, amending them from time to time, as their defects were developed. According to these laws, when an individual wished a portion of unappropriated land, he was to locate and survey it by a public officer, appointed for that purpose: its breadth was to bear a certain proportion to its length: the grant

Digitized by Google

grant was to be executed by the governor: and the lands were to be improved in a certain manner, within a given time. From these regulations there resulted to the state a sole and exclusive power of taking conveyances of the Indian right of soil: since, according to them an Indian conveyance alone could give no right to an individual, which the laws would acknowledge. The state, or the crown, thereafter, made general purchases of the Indians from time to time, and the governor parcelled them out by special grants, conformed to the rules before described, which it was not in his power, or in that of the crown, to dispense with. Grants, unaccompanied by their proper legal circumstances, were set aside, regularly *scire facias*, or by bill in chancery. Since the establishment of our new government, this order of things is but little changed. An individual, wishing to appropriate to himself lands still unappropriated by any other, pays to the public treasurer a sum of money proportioned to the quantity he wants. He carries the treasurer's receipt to the auditors of public accounts, who thereupon debit the treasurer with the sum, and order the register of the land-office to give the party a warrant for his land. With this warrant from the register, he goes to the surveyor of the county where the land lies on which he has cast his eye. The surveyor lays it off for him, gives him its exact description, in the form of a certificate, which certificate he returns to the land office, where a grant is made out, and is signed by the gov-

Digitized by Google

ernor. This veſts in him a perfect dominion in his lands, tranſmiſſible to whom he pleaſes by deed or will, or by deſcent to his heirs if he die inteſtate.

Many of the laws which were in force during the monarchy being relative merely to that form of government, or inculcating principles inconſiſtent with republicaniſm, the firſt aſſembly which met after the eſtabliſhment of the commonwealth appointed a committee to reviſe the whole code, to reduce it into proper form and volume, and report it to the aſſembly. This work has been executed by three gentlemen, and reported; but probably will not be taken up till a reſtoration of peace ſhall leave to the legiſlature leiſure to go through ſuch a work.

The plan of the reviſal was this. The common law of England, by which is meant, that part of the Engliſh law which was anterior to the date of the oldeſt ſtatutes extant, is made the baſis of the work. It was thought dangerous to attempt to reduce it to a text: it was therefore left to be collected from the uſual monuments of it. Neceſſary alterations in that, and ſo much of the whole body of the Britiſh ſtatutes, and of acts of aſſembly, as were thought proper to be retained, were digeſted into 126 new acts, in which ſimplicity of ſtyle was aimed at, as far as was ſafe. The following are the moſt remarkable alterations propoſed:

To change the rules of deſcent, ſo as that the lands of any perſon dying inteſtate ſhall be diviſible equally among

Digitized by Google

among all his children, or other repreſentatives, in equal degree.

To make ſlaves diſtributable among the next of kin, as other moveables.

To have all public expenſes, whether of the general treaſury, or of a pariſh or county, (as for the maintenance of the poor, building bridges, court-houſes, &c.) ſupplied by aſſeſſments on the citizens, in proportion to their property.

To hire undertakers for keeping the public roads in repair, and indemnify individuals through whoſe lands new roads ſhall be opened.

To define with preciſion the rules whereby aliens ſhould become citizens, and citizens make themſelves aliens.

To eſtabliſh religious freedom on the broadeſt bottom.

To emancipate all ſlaves born after paſſing the act. The bill reported by the reviſors does not itſelf contain this propoſition; but an amendment containing it was prepared, to be offered to the legiſlature whenever the bill ſhould be taken up, and further directing, that they ſhould continue with their parents to a certain age, then be brought up at the public expenſe, to tillage, arts or ſciences, according to their geniuſes, till the females ſhould be eighteen, and the males twenty-one years of age, when they ſhould be colonized to ſuch place as the circumſtances of the time ſhould render moſt proper, ſending them out with arms, implements of

Digitized by Google

of houſehold and the handicraft arts, ſeeds, pairs of the uſeful domeſtic animals, &c. to declare them a free and independent people, and extend to them our alliance and protection till they have acquired ſtrength; and to ſend veſſels at the ſame time to other parts of the world for an equal number of white inhabitants; to induce whom to migrate hither, proper encouragements were to be propoſed. It will probably be aſked, Why not retain and incorporate the blacks into the ſtate, and thus ſave the expenſe of ſupplying by importation of white ſettlers, the vacancies they will leave? Deep rooted prejudices entertained by the whites; ten thouſand recollections, by the blacks, of the injuries they have ſuſtained; new provocations; the real diſtinctions which nature has made; and many other circumſtances, will divide us into parties, and produce convulſions, which will probably never end but in the extirmination of the one or the other race.—To theſe objections, which are political, may be added others, which are phyſical and moral. The firſt difference which ſtrikes us is that of color. Whether the black of the negro reſides in the reticular membrane between the ſkin and ſcarf-ſkin, or in the ſcarf-ſkin itſelf; whether it proceeds from the color of the blood, the color of the bile, or from that of ſome other ſecretion, the difference is fixed in nature, and is as real as if its ſeat and cauſe were better known to us. And is this difference of no importance? Is it not the foundation of a greater or leſs

ſhare

Digitized by Google

ſhare of beauty in the two races? Are not the fine mixtures of red and white, the expreſſions of every paſſion by greater or leſs ſuffuſions of color in the one, preferable to that eternal monotony, which reigns in the countenances, that immoveable veil of black which covers all the emotions of the other race? Add to theſe, flowing hair, a more elegant ſymmetry of form, their own judgment in favor of the whites, declared by the preference of them, as uniformly as is the preference of the Oranootan for the black women over thoſe of his own ſpecies. The circumſtance of ſuperior beauty, is thought worthy attention in the propagation of our horſes, dogs, and other domeſtic animals; why not in that of man? Beſides thoſe of color, figure, and hair, there are other phyſical diſtinctions proving a difference of race. They have leſs hair on the face and body. They ſecrete leſs by the kidnies, and more by the glands of the ſkin, which gives them a very ſtrong and diſagreeable odor. This greater degree of tranſpiration renders them more tolerant of heat, and leſs ſo of cold than the whites. Perhaps too a difference of ſtructure in the pulmonary apparatus, which a late ingenious* experimentaliſt has diſcovered to be the principal regulator of animal heat, may have diſabled them from extricating, in the act of inſpiration, ſo much of that fluid from the outer air, or obliged them in expiration to part with more of it. They ſeem to require leſs ſleep. A black after

* Crawford.

Digitized by Google

ter hard labor through the day, will be induced by the ſlighteſt amuſements to ſit up till midnight, or later though knowing he muſt be out with the firſt dawn of the morning. They are at leaſt as brave and more adventureſome. But this may perhaps proceed from a want of forethought, which prevents their ſeeing a danger till it be preſent. When preſent, they do not go through it with more coolneſs or ſteadineſs than the whites. They are more ardent after their female: but love ſeems with them to be more an eager deſire, than a tender delicate mixture of ſentiment and ſenſation. Their griefs are tranſient. Thoſe numberleſs afflictions, which render it doubtful whether heaven has given life to us in mercy or in wrath, are leſs felt, and ſooner forgotten with them. In general, their exiſtence appears to participate more of ſenſation than reflection. To this muſt be aſcribed their diſpoſition to ſleep when abſtracted from their diverſions, and unemployed in labor. An animal whoſe body is at reſt, and who does not reflect, muſt be diſpoſed to ſleep of courſe. Comparing them by their faculties of memory, reaſon, and imagination, it appears to me that in memory they are equal to the whites; in reaſon much inferior, as I think one could ſcarcely be found capable of tracing and comprehending the inveſtigations of Euclid; and that in imagination they are dull, taſteleſs, and anomalous. It would be unfair to follow them to Africa for this inveſtigation. We will conſider them here on the ſame

Digitized by Google

ſame ſtage with the whites, and where the facts are not apocryphal on which a judgment is to be formed. It will be right to make great allowances for the difference of condition, of education, of converſation, of the ſphere in which they move. Many millions of them have been brought to, and born in America. Moſt of them indeed have been confined to tillage, to their own homes, and their own ſociety: yet many have been ſo ſituated, that they might have availed themſelves of the converſation of their maſters; many have been brought up to the handicraft arts, and from that circumſtance have always been aſſociated with the whites. Some have been liberally educated, and all have lived in countries where the arts and ſciences are cultivated to a conſiderable degree, and have had before their eyes ſamples of the beſt works from abroad. The Indians, with no advantages of this kind, will often carve figures on their pipes not deſtitute of deſign and merit. They will crayon out an animal, a plant, or a country, ſo as to prove the exiſtence of a germ in their minds which only wants cultivation. They aſtoniſh you with ſtrokes of the moſt ſublime oratory; ſuch as prove their reaſon and ſentiment ſtrong, their imagination glowing and elevated. But never yet could I find a black that had uttered a thought above the level of plain narration; never ſee even an elementary trait of painting or ſculpture. In muſic they are more generally gifted than the whites with accurate ears for tune and time,

and

Digitized by Google

and they have been found capable of imagining a ſmall catch.* Whether they will be equal to the compoſition of a more extenſive run of melody, or of complicated harmony is yet to be proved. Miſery is often the parent of the moſt affecting touches in poetry. Among the blacks is miſery enough, God knows, but no poetry. Love is the peculiar œſtrum of the poet. Their love is ardent, but it kindles the ſenſes only, not the imagination. Religion indeed has produced a Phillis Whately; but it could not produce a poet. The compoſitions publiſhed under her name are below the dignity of criticiſm. The heroes of the Dunciad are to her, as Hercules to the author of that poem. Ignatius Sancho has approached nearer to merit in compoſition; yet his letters do more honor to the heart than the head. They breathe the pureſt effuſions of friendſhip and general philanthropy, and ſhew how great a degree of the latter may be compounded with ſtrong religious zeal. He is often happy in the turn of his compliments, and his ſtyle is eaſy and familiar, except when he affects a Shandean fabrication of words. But his imagination is wild and extravagant, eſcapes inceſſantly from every reſtraint of reaſon and taſte, and in the courſe of its vagaries, leaves a tract of thoughts as incoherent and eccentric as is the courſe of a meteor through the ſky.

* The inſtrument proper to them is the Banjar, which they brought hither from Africa, and which is the original of the guitar, its chords being preciſely the four lower chords of the guitar.

Digitized by Google

ſky. His ſubjects ſhould often have led him to a proceſs of ſober reaſoning: yet we find him always ſubſtituting ſentiment for demonſtration. Upon the whole, though we admit him to the firſt place among thoſe of his own color who have preſented themſelves to the public judgment, yet when we compare him with the writers of the race among whom he lived and particularly with the epiſtolary claſs, in which he has taken his own ſtand, we are compelled to enroll him at the bottom of the column. This criticiſm ſuppoſes the letters publiſhed under his name to be genuine, and to have received amendment from no other hand: points which would not be of eaſy inveſtigation. The improvement of the blacks in body and mind, in the firſt inſtance of their mixture with the whites, has been obſerved by every one, and proves that their inferiority is not the effect merely of their condition of life. We know that among the Romans, about the Auguſtan age eſpecially, the condition of their ſlaves was much more deplorable than that of the blacks on the continent of America. The two ſexes were confined in ſeparate apartments, becauſe to raiſe a child coſt the maſter more than to buy one. Cato, for a very reſtricted indulgence to his ſlaves in this particular,* took from them a certain price. But in this country the ſlaves multiply as faſt as the free inhabitants. Their ſituation and manners place the

* *Tous doulous etaxen oriſmenou nomismatos homilein tais oberapainiſin.* Plutarch, Cato.

Digitized by Google

commerce between the two ſexes almoſt without reſtraint. The ſame Cato, on a principle of economy, always ſold his ſick and ſuperanuated ſlaves. He gives it as a ſtanding precept to a maſter viſiting his farm, to ſell his old oxen, old waggons, old tools, old and diſeaſed ſervants, and every thing elſe become uſeleſs. 'Vendat boves vetulos, plauſtrum vetus, 'ferramenta vetera, ſervum ſenem, ſervum morboſum, '& ſi quid aliud ſuperſit vendat.' Cato de re ruſticâ. c. 2. The American ſlaves cannot enumerate this among the injuries and inſults they receive. It was the common practice to expoſe in the iſland Æſculapius, in the Tyber, diſeaſed ſlaves, whoſe cure was like to become tedious.† The emperor Claudius, by an edict, gave freedom to ſuch of them as ſhould recover, and firſt declared that if any perſon choſe to kill rather than expoſe them, it ſhould be deemed homicide. The expoſing them is a crime of which no inſtance has exiſted with us; and were it to be followed by death, it would be puniſhed capitally. We are told of a certain Vedius Pollio, who in the preſence of Auguſtus, would have given a ſlave as food to his fiſh, for having broken a glaſs. With the Romans, the regular method of taking the evidence of their ſlaves was under torture. Here it has been thought better never to reſort to their evidence. When a maſter was murdered, all his ſlaves, in the ſame houſe, or within hearing, were condemned to death.

† Suet. Claud. 25.

Digitized by Google

death. Here punishment falls on the guilty only, and as precise proof is required against him as against a freeman. Yet notwithstanding these and other discouraging circumstances among the Romans, their slaves were often their rarest artists. They excelled too in science, insomuch as to be usually employed as tutors to their master's children. Epictetus, Terence, and Phædrus, were slaves. But they were of the race of whites. It is not their condition then, but nature, which has produced the distinction. Whether further observation will or will not verify the conjecture, that nature has been less bountiful to them in the endowments of the head, I believe that in those of the heart she will be found to have done them justice. That disposition to theft with which they have been branded, must be ascribed to their situation, and not to any depravity of the moral sense. The man in whose favor no laws of property exist, probably feels himself less bound to respect those made in favor of others. When arguing for ourselves, we lay it down as a fundamental, that laws, to be just, must give a reciprocation of right: that, without this, they are mere arbitrary rules of conduct, founded in force, and not in conscience: and it is a problem which I give to the master to solve, whether the religious precepts against the violation of property were not framed for him as well as his slave? And whether the slave may not as justifiably take a little from one, who has taken all from him, as he may slay one who would slay him? That

Digitized by Google

That a change in the relations in which a man is placed ſhould change his ideas of moral right and wrong, is neither new, nor peculiar to the color of the blacks. Homer tells us it was ſo 2600 years ago.

'Emiju, ger t' aretes apoainutai euruopa Zeus
Haneros, eut' an min kata doulion ema elſin.

Od. 17. 323.

Jove fix'd it certain, that whatever day
Makes man a ſlave takes half his worth away.

But the ſlaves of which Homer ſpeaks were whites. Notwithſtanding theſe conſiderations which muſt weaken their reſpect for the laws of property, we find among them numerous inſtances of the moſt rigid integrity, and as many as among their better inſtructed maſters, of benevolence, gratitude, and unſhaken fidelity. The opinion that they are inferior in the faculties of reaſon and imagination, muſt be hazarded with great diffidence. To juſtify a general concluſion, requires many obſervations, even where the ſubject may be' ſubmitted to the anatomical knife, to optical claſſes, to analyſis by fire, or by ſolvents. How much more then where it is a faculty not a ſubſtance, we are examining; where it eludes the reſearch of all the ſenſes; where the conditions of its exiſtence are various and variouſly combined; where the effects of thoſe which are preſent or abſent bid defiance to calculation; let me add too, as a circumſtance of great tenderneſs, where our concluſion would degrade a whole

Digitized by Google

whole race of men from the rank in the ſcale of beings which their Creator may perhaps have given them. To our reproach it muſt be ſaid, that though for a century and a half we have had under our eyes the races of black and of red men, they have never yet been viewed by us as ſubjects of natural hiſtory. I advance it therefore as a ſuſpicion only, that the blacks, whether originally a diſtinct race, or made diſtinct by time and circumſtances, are inferior to the whites in the endowments both of body and mind. It is not againſt experience to ſuppoſe, that different ſpecies of the ſame genus, or varieties of the ſame ſpecies, may poſſeſs different qualifications. Will not a lover of natural hiſtory then, one who views the gradations in all the races of animals with the eye of philoſophy, excuſe an effort to keep thoſe in the department of man as diſtinct as nature has formed them? This unfortunate difference of color, and perhaps of faculty, is a powerful obſtacle to the emancipation of theſe people. Many of their advocates, while they wiſh to vindicate the liberty of human nature are anxious alſo to preſerve its dignity and beauty. Some of theſe, embarraſſed by the queſtion, 'What further is to be done with them!' Join themſelves in oppoſition with thoſe who are actuated by ſordid avarice only. Among the Romans emancipation required but one effort. The ſlave, when made free, might mix with, without ſtaining the blood of his maſter. But with us a ſecond is neceſſary,

Digitized by Google

neceſſary, unknown to hiſtory. When freed, he is to be removed beyond the reach of mixture.

The reviſed code further propoſes to proportion crimes and puniſhments. This is attempted on the following ſcale.

Digitized by Google

I. Crimes whose punishment extends to LIFE.

1. High treason. Death by hanging.
   Forfeiture of lands and goods to the commonwealth.
2. Petty treason. Death by hanging. Dissection.
   Forfeiture of half the lands and goods to the representatives of the party slain.
3. Murder. 1. by poison. Death by poison.
   Forfeiture of one-half, as before.
   2. in duel. Death by hanging. Gibbeting, if the challenger.
   Forfeiture of one-half as before, unless it be the party challenged, then the forfeiture is to the commonwealth.
   3. In any other way. Death by hanging.
   Forfeiture of one-half as before.
4. Manslaughter. The second offence is murder.

II. Crimes whose punishment goes to LIMB.

1. Rape. } Dismemberment.
2. Sodomy. }
3. Maiming. } Retaliation, and the forfeiture of half the lands and goods to the sufferer.
4. Disfiguring. }

III. Crimes punishable by LABOR.

1. Manslaughter, 1st offence. Labor VII. years for the public. Forfeiture of half, as in murder.
2. Counterfeiting money. Labor VI. years. Forfeiture of lands and goods to the commonwealth.
3. Arson - - - } Labor V. years. - - Reparation three-fold.
4. Asportation of vessels. }
5. Robbery - - } Labor IV. years. - - Reparation double.
6. Burglary - - }
7. House-breaking - } Labor III. years. - - Reparation.
8. Horse-stealing - }
9. Grand larceny - Labor II. years. - - Reparation. Pillory.
10. Petty larceny - Labor I. year. - - Reparation. Pillory.
11. Pretensions to witchcraft, &c. Ducking. - - - Stripes.
12. Excusable homicide - } To be pitied, not punished.
13. Suicide - - - - }
14. Apostacy. Heresy - }

Digitized by Google

Pardon and privilege of clergy are propoſed to be aboliſhed; but if the verdict be againſt the defendant, the court in their diſcretion may allow a new trial. No attainder to cauſe a corruption of blood, or forfeiture of dower. Slaves guilty of offences puniſhable in others by labor, to be tranſported to Africa, or elſewhere, as the circumſtances of the time admit, there to be continued in ſlavery. A rigorous regimen propoſed for thoſe condemned to labor.

Another object of the reviſal is, to diffuſe knowledge more generally through the maſs of the people. This bill propoſes to lay off every county into ſmall diſtricts of five or ſix miles ſquare, called hundreds, and in each of them to eſtabliſh a ſchool for teaching reading, writing, and arithmetic. The tutor to be ſupported by the hundred, and every perſon in it entitled to ſend their children three years gratis, and as much longer as they pleaſe, paying for it. Theſe ſchools to be under a viſitor who is annually to chooſe the boy, of beſt genius in the ſchool, of thoſe whoſe parents are too poor to give them further education, and to ſend him forward to one of the grammar ſchools, of which twenty are propoſed to be erected in different parts of the country, for teaching Greek, Latin, geography, and the higher branches of numerical arithmetic. Of the boys thus ſent in one year, trial is to be made at the grammar ſchools one or two years, and the beſt genius of the whole ſelected, and continued ſix years, and the reſidue diſmiſſed. By this means

Digitized by Google

means twenty of the beſt geniuſes will be raked from the rubbiſh annually, and be inſtructed, at the public expenſe, ſo far as the grammar ſchools go. At the end of ſix years' inſtruction, one half are to be diſcontinued (from among whom the grammar ſchools will probably be ſupplied with future maſters;) and the other half, who are to be choſen for the ſuperiority of their parts and diſpoſition, are to be ſent and continued three years in the ſtudy of ſuch ſciences as they ſhall chooſe, at William and Mary college, the plan of which is propoſed to be enlarged, as will be hereafter explained, and extended to all the uſeful ſciences. The ultimate reſult of the whole ſcheme of education would be the teaching all the children of the ſtate reading, writing, and common arithmetic: turning out ten annually of ſuperior genius, well taught in Greek, Latin, geography, and the higher branches of arithmetic: turning out ten others annually, of ſtill ſuperior parts, who, to thoſe branches of learning, ſhall have added ſuch of the ſciences as their genius ſhall have led them to; the furniſhing to the wealthier part of the people convenient ſchools, at which their children may be educated at their own expenſe.—The general objects of this law are to provide an education adapted to the years, to the capacity, and the condition of every one, and directed to their freedom and happineſs. Specific details were not proper for the law. Theſe muſt be the buſineſs of the viſitors entruſted with its execution. The firſt

Digitized by Google

ſtage of this education being the ſchools of the hundreds wherein the great maſs of the people will receive their inſtruction, the principal foundations of future order will be laid here. Inſtead therefore of putting the Bible and Teſtament into the hands of the children at an age when their judgments are not ſufficiently matured for religious inquiries, their memories may here be ſtored with the moſt uſeful facts from Grecian, Roman, European and American hiſtory. The firſt elements of morality too may be inſtilled into their minds; ſuch as, when further developed as their judgments advance in ſtrength, may teach them how to work out their own greateſt happineſs, by ſhewing them that it does not depend on the condition of life in which chance has placed them, but is always the reſult of a good conſcience, good health, occupation, and freedom in all juſt purſuits.—Thoſe whom either the wealth of their parents or the adoption of the ſtate ſhall deſtine to higher degrees of learning, will go on to the grammar ſchools, which conſtitute the next ſtage, there to be inſtructed in the languages. The learning Greek and Latin, I am told, is going into diſuſe in Europe. I know not what their manners and cuſtoms may call for: but it would be very ill-judged in us to follow their example in this inſtance. There is a certain period of life, ſay from eight to fifteen or ſixteen years of age, when the mind like the body is not yet firm enough for laborious and cloſe operations. If applied to ſuch, it falls an early victim

Digitized by Google

victim to premature exertion; exhibiting indeed at first, in these young and tender subjects, the flattering appearance of their being men while they are yet children, but ending in reducing them to be children when they should be men. The memory is then most susceptible and tenacious of impressions; and the learning of languages being chiefly a work of memory, it seems precisely fitted to the powers of this period, which is long enough too for acquiring the most useful languages, ancient and modern. I do not pretend that language is science. It is only an instrument for the attainment of science. But that time is not lost which is employed in providing tools for future operation; more especially as in this case the books put into the hands of the youth for this purpose may be such as will at the same time impress their minds with useful facts and good principles. If this period be suffered to pass in idleness, the mind becomes lethargic and impotent, as would the body it inhabits if unexercised during the same time. The sympathy between body and mind during their rise, progress and decline, is too strict and obvious to endanger our being misled while we reason from the one to the other.—As soon as they are of sufficient age, it is supposed they will be sent on from the grammar schools to the university, which constitutes our third and last stage, there to study those sciences which may be adapted to their views.—By that part of our plan which prescribes the selection of the youths of genius from among the classes of the poor,

we

Digitized by Google

we hope to avail the ſtate of thoſe talents which nature has ſown as liberally among the poor as the rich, but which periſh without uſe, if not ſought for and cultivated. But of the views of this law none is more important, none more legitimate, than that of rendering the people ſafe, as they are the ultimate guardians of their own liberty. For this purpoſe the reading in the firſt ſtage, where *they* will receive their whole education, is propoſed, as has been ſaid, to be chiefly hiſtorical. Hiſtory by appriſing them of the paſt will enable them to judge of the future; it will avail them of the experience of other times and other nations; it will qualify them as judges of the actions and deſigns of men; it will enable them to know ambition under every diſguiſe it may aſſume; and knowing it, to defeat its views. In every government on earth is ſome traces of human weakneſs, ſome germ of corruption and degeneracy, which cunning will diſcover, and wickedneſs inſenſibly open, cultivate and improve. Every government degenerates when truſted to the rulers of the people alone. The people themſelves then are its only ſafe depoſitories. And to render them ſafe their minds muſt be improved to a certain degree. This indeed is not all that is neceſſary, though it be eſſentially neceſſary. An amendment of our conſtitution muſt here come in aid of the public education. The influence over government muſt be ſhared among all the people. If every individual which compoſes their maſs participates of the ultimate authority, the

Digitized by Google

the government will be safe; because the corrupting the whole mass will exceed any private resources of wealth; and public ones cannot be provided but by levies on the people. In this case every man would have to pay his own price. The government of Great Britain has been corrupted, because but one man in ten has a right to vote for members of parliament. The sellers of the government therefore get nine-tenths of their price clear. It has been thought that corruption is restrained by confining the right of suffrage to a few of the wealthier of the people: but it would be more effectually restrained by an extension of that right to such numbers as would bid defiance to the means of corruption.

Lastly, it is proposed, by a bill in this revisal, to begin a public library and gallery, by laying out a certain sum annually in books, paintings, and statues.

Digitized by Google

QUERY XV.

THE colleges and public eſtabliſhments, the roads, buildings, &c. ?

The college of William and Mary is the only public ſeminary of Learning in this ſtate. It was founded in the time of king William and queen Mary, who granted to it 20,000 acres of land, and a penny a pound duty on certain tobaccoes exported from Virginia and Maryland, which had been levied by the ſtatute of 25 Car. 2. The aſſembly alſo gave it, by temporary laws, a duty on liquors imported, and ſkins and furs exported. From theſe reſources it received upwards of 3000l. communibus annis. The buildings are of brick, ſufficient for an indifferent accommodation of perhaps an hundred ſtudents. By its charter it was to be under the government of twenty viſitors, who were to be its legiſlators, and to have a preſident and ſix profeſſors, who were incorporated. It was allowed a repreſentative in the general aſſembly. Under this charter, a profeſſorſhip of Greek and Latin languages, a profeſſorſhip of mathematics, one of moral philoſophy, and two of divinity, were eſtabliſhed. To theſe were annexed for a ſixth profeſſorſhip, a conſiderable donation by Mr. Boyle of England, for the inſtruction of the Indians, and their converſion to Chriſtianity.

Digitized by Google

Chriſtianity. This was called the profeſſorſhip of Brafferton, from an eſtate of that name in England, purchaſed with the monies given. The admiſſion of the learners of Latin and Greek filled the college with children. This rendered it diſagreeable and degrading to young gentlemen already prepared for entering on the ſciences, they were diſcouraged from reſorting to it, and thus the ſchools for mathematics and moral philoſophy, which might have been of ſome ſervice, became of very little. The revenues too were exhauſted in accommodating thoſe who came only to acquire the rudiments of ſcience. After the preſent revolution, the viſitors, having no power to change thoſe circumſtances in the conſtitution of the college which were fixed by the charter, and being therefore, confined in the number of profeſſorſhips, undertook to change the objects of the profeſſorſhips. They excluded the two ſchools for divinity, and that for the Greek and Latin languages, and ſubſtituted others; ſo that at preſent they ſtand thus:

A Profeſſorſhip for Law and Police:
Anatomy and Medicine:
Natural Philoſophy and Mathematics:
Moral Philoſophy, the law of Nature and Nations, the fine Arts:
Modern Languages:
For the Brafferton.

And it is propoſed, ſo ſoon as the legiſlature ſhall have leiſure to take up this ſubject, to deſire authori-

Digitized by Google

ty from them to increaſe the number of profeſſorſhips, as well for the purpoſe of ſubdividing thoſe already inſtituted, as of adding others for other branches of ſcience. To the profeſſorſhips uſually eſtabliſhed in the univerſities of Europe, it would ſeem proper to add one for the ancient languages and literature of the North, on account of their connection with our own language, laws, cuſtoms, and hiſtory. The purpoſes of the Brafferton inſtitution would be better anſwered by maintaining a perpetual miſſion among the Indian tribes, the object of which, beſides inſtructing them in the principles of Chriſtianity, as the founder requires, ſhould be to collect their traditions, laws, cuſtoms, languages, and other circumſtances which might lead to a diſcovery of their relation with one another, or deſcent from other nations. When theſe objects are accompliſhed with one tribe, miſſionary might paſs on to another.

The roads are under the government of the county courts, ſubject to be controled by the general court. They order new roads to be opened wherever they think them neceſſary. The inhabitants of the county are by them laid off into precincts, to each of which they allot a convenient portion of the public roads to be kept in repair. Such bridges as may be built without the aſſiſtance of artificers, they are to build. If the ſtream be ſuch as to require a bridge of regular workmanſhip, the court employs workmen to build it, at the expenſe of the whole county. If it be too great

Digitized by Google

great for the county, application is made to the general aſſembly, who authorize individuals to build it, and to take a fixed toll from all paſſengers, or give ſanction to ſuch other propoſition as to them appears reaſonable.

Ferries are admitted only at ſuch places as are particularly pointed out by law, and the rates of ferriage are fixed.

Taverns are licenſed by the courts, who fix their rates from time to time.

The private buildings are very rarely conſtructed of ſtone or brick; much the greateſt portion being of ſcantling and boards, plaiſtered with lime. It is impoſſible to deviſe things more ugly, uncomfortable, and happily more periſhable. There are two or three plans, on one of which, according to its ſize, moſt of the houſes in the ſtate are built. The pooreſt people build huts of logs, laid horizontally in pens, ſtopping the interſtices with mud. Theſe are warmer in winter and cooler in ſummer, than the more expenſive conſtruction of ſcantling and plank. The wealthy are attentive to the raiſing of vegetables, but very little ſo to fruits. The poorer people attend to neither, living principally on milk and animal diet. This is the more inexcuſable, as the climate requires indiſpenſably a free uſe of vegetable food, for health as well as comfort, and is very friendly to the raiſing of fruits. The only public buildings worthy mention are the capitol, the palace, the college, and the hoſpital for lunatics,

Digitized by Google

all of them in Williamſburgh, heretofore the ſeat of our government. The capitol is a light and airy ſtructure, with a portico in front of two orders, the lower of which, being Doric, is tolerably juſt in its proportions and ornaments, ſave only that the intercolonations are too large. The upper is Ionic, much too ſmall for that on which it is mounted, its ornaments not proper to the order, nor proportioned within themſelves. It is crowned with a pediment, which is too high for its ſpan. Yet, on the whole, it is the moſt pleaſing piece of architecture we have. The palace is not handſome without: but it is ſpacious and commodious within, is prettily ſituated, and with the grounds annexed to it, is capable of being made an elegant ſeat. The college and hoſpital are rude, miſ-ſhapen piles, which, but that they have roofs would be taken for brick-kilns. There are no other public buildings but churches and court-houſes, in which no attempts are made at elegance. Indeed it would not be eaſy to execute ſuch an attempt, as a workman could ſcarcely be found here capable of drawing an order. The genius of architecture ſeems to have ſhed its maledictions over this land. Buildings are often erected by individuals of conſiderable expenſe. To give theſe ſymmetry and taſte would not increaſe their coſt. It would only change the arrangement of the materials, the form and combination of the members. This would often coſt leſs than the burthen of barbarous ornaments with which theſe buildings

Digitized by Google

buildings are ſometimes charged. But the firſt principles of the art are unknown, and there exiſts ſcarcely a model among us ſufficiently chaſte to give an idea of them. Architecture being one of the fine arts, and as ſuch within the department of a profeſſor of the college, according to the new arrangement, perhaps a ſpark may fall on ſome young ſubjects of natural taſte, kindle up their genius, and produce a reformation in this elegant and uſeful art. But all we ſhall do in this way will produce no permanent improvement to our country while the unhappy prejudice prevails that houſes of brick or ſtone are leſs wholeſome than thoſe of wood. A dew is often obſerved on the walls of the former in rainy weather, and the moſt obvious ſolution is, that the rain has penetrated through theſe walls. The following facts however are ſufficient to prove the error of this ſolution. 1. This dew upon the walls appears when there is no rain, if the ſtate of the atmoſphere be moiſt. 2. It appears on the partition as well as the exterior walls. 3. So alſo on pavements of brick or ſtone. 4. It is more copious in proportion as the walls are thicker; the reverſe of which ought to be the caſe, if this hypotheſis were juſt. If cold water be poured into a veſſel of ſtone, or glaſs, a dew forms inſtantly on the outſide: but if it be poured into a veſſel of wood, there is no ſuch appearance. It is not ſuppoſed, in the firſt caſe, that the water has exuded through the glaſs, but that it is precipitated from the circumambient air; as the humid

Digitized by Google

humid particles of vapor, paſſing from the boiler of an alembic through its refrigerant, are precipitated from the air, in which they were ſuſpended, on the internal ſurface of the refrigerant. Walls of brick or ſtone act as the refrigerant in this inſtance. They are ſufficiently cold to condenſe and precipitate the moiſture ſuſpended in the air of the room, when it is heavily charged therewith. But walls of wood are not ſo. The queſtion then is, whether air in which this moiſture is left floating, or that which is deprived of it, be moſt wholeſome? In both caſes the remedy is eaſy. A little fire kindled in the room, whenever the air is damp, prevents the precipitation on the walls: and this practice, found healthy in the warmeſt as well as coldeſt ſeaſons, is as neceſſary in a wooden as in a ſtone or brick houſe. I do not mean to ſay, that the rain never penetrates through walls of brick. On the contrary I have ſeen inſtances of it. But with us it is only through the northern and eaſtern walls of the houſe, after a north-eaſterly ſtorm. Theſe being the only ones which continue long enough to force through the walls. This however happens too rarely to give a juſt character of unwholeſomeneſs to ſuch houſes. In a houſe, the walls of which are of well-burnt brick and good mortar, I have ſeen the rain penetrate through but twice in a dozen or fifteen years. The inhabitants of Europe, who dwell chiefly in houſes of ſtone or brick, are ſurely as healthy as thoſe of Virginia. Theſe houſes have the advantage

Digitized by Google

advantage too of being warmer in winter and cooler in ſummer than thoſe of wood; of being cheaper in their firſt conſtruction, where lime is convenient, and infinitely more durable. The latter conſideration renders it of great importance to eradicate this prejudice from the minds of our countrymen. A country whoſe buildings are of wood, can never increaſe in its improvements to any conſiderable degree. Their duration is highly eſtimated at 50 years. Every half century then our country becomes a tabula raſa, whereon we have to ſet out anew, as in the firſt moment of ſeating it. Whereas when buildings are of durable materials, every new edifice is an actual and permanent acquiſition to the ſtate, adding to its value as well as to its ornament.

QUERY XVI.

THE meaſures taken with regard to the eſtates and poſſeſſions of the rebels, commonly called tories?

A tory has been properly defined to be a traitor in thought but not in deed. The only deſcription by which the laws have endeavored to come at him, was that of non-jurors, or perſons refuſing to take the oath of fidelity to the ſtate. Perſons of this deſcription

Digitized by Google

tion were at one time ſubjected to double taxation, at another to treble, and laſtly were allowed retribution, and placed on a level with good citizens. It may be mentioned as a proof both of the lenity of our government, and unanimity of its inhabitants, that though this war has now raged near ſeven years, not a ſingle execution for treaſon has taken place.

Under this query I will ſtate the meaſures which have been adopted as to Britiſh property, the owners of which ſtand on a much fairer footing than the tories. By our laws, the ſame as the Engliſh in this reſpect, no alien can hold lands, nor alien enemy maintain an action for money, or other moveable thing. Lands acquired or held by aliens become forfeited to the ſtate; and, on an action by an alien enemy to recover money, or other moveable property, the defendant may plead that he is an alien enemy. This extinguiſhes his right in the hands of the debtor or holder of his moveable property. By our ſeparation from Great-Britain, Britiſh ſubjects became aliens, and being at war, they were alien enemies. Their lands were of courſe forfeited, and their debts irrecoverable. The aſſembly however, paſſed laws, at various times, for ſaving their property. They firſt ſequeſtered their lands, ſlaves, and other property on their farms in the hands of commiſſioners, who were moſtly the confidential friends or agents of the owners, and directed their clear profits to be paid into the treaſury: and they gave leave to all perſons owing debts to Britiſh

ſubjects

Digitized by Google

ſubjects to pay them alſo into the treaſury. The monies ſo to be brought in were declared to remain the property of the Britiſh ſubject, and, if uſed by the ſtate, were to be repaid, unleſs an improper conduct in Great-Britain ſhould render a detention of it reaſonable. Depreciation had at that time, though unacknowledged and unperceived by the whigs, begun in ſome ſmall degree. Great ſums of money were paid in by debtors. At a later period, the aſſembly, adhering to the political principles which forbid an alien to hold lands in the ſtate, ordered all Britiſh property to be ſold: and become ſenſible of the real progreſs of depreciation, and of the loſſes which would thence occur, if not guarded againſt, they ordered that the proceeds of the ſales ſhould be converted into their then worth in tobacco, ſubject to the future direction of the legiſlature. This act has left the queſtion of retribution more problematical. In May, 1780, another act took away the permiſſion to pay into the public treaſury debts due to Britiſh ſubjects.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY XVII.

THE different religions received into that ſtate?

The firſt ſettlers in this country were emigrants from England, of the Engliſh church, juſt at a point of time when it was flushed with complete victory over the religious of all other perſuaſions. Poſſeſſed, as they became, of the powers of making, adminiſtering, and executing the laws, they ſhewed equal intolerance in this country with their Preſbyterian brethren, who had emigrated to the northern government. The poor Quakers were flying from perſecution in England. They caſt their eyes on theſe new countries as aſylums of civil and religious freedom; but they found them free only for the reigning ſect. Several acts of the Virginia aſſembly of 1659, 1662 and 1693, had made it penal in parents to refuſe to have their children baptized; had prohibited the unlawful aſſembling of Quakers; had made it penal for any maſter of a veſſel to bring a Quaker into the ſtate; had ordered thoſe already here, and ſuch as ſhould come thereafter, to be impriſoned till they ſhould abjure the country; provided a milder puniſhment for the firſt and ſecond return, but death for their third; had inhibited all perſons from ſuffering their meetings in

Digitized by Google

in or near their houſes, entertaining them individually, or diſpoſing of books which ſupported their tenets. If no execution took place here, as did in New-England, it was not owing to the moderation of the church, or ſpirit of the legiſlature, as may be inferred from the law itſelf; but to hiſtorical circumſtances which have not been handed down to us. The Anglicans retained full poſſeſſion of the country about a century. Other opinions began then to creep in, and the great care of the government to ſupport their own church, having begotten an equal degree of indolence in its clergy, two-thirds of the people had become diſſenters at the commencement of the preſent revolution. The laws indeed were ſtill oppreſſive on them, but the ſpirit of the one party had ſubſided into moderation, and of the other had riſen to a degree of determination which commanded reſpect.

The preſent ſtate of our laws on the ſubject of religion is this. The convention of May 1776, in their declaration of rights, declared it to be a truth, and a natural right, that the exerciſe of religion ſhould be free; but when they proceeded to form on that declaration the ordinance of government, inſtead of taking up every principle declared in the bill of rights, and guarding it by legiſlative ſanction, they paſſed over that which aſſerted our religious rights, leaving them as they found them. The ſame convention, however, when they met as a member of the general

Digitized by Google

assembly in October, 1776, repealed all *acts of parliament* which had rendered criminal the maintaining any opinions in matters of religion, the forbearing to repair to church, and the exercising any mode of worship; and suspended the laws giving salaries to the clergy, which suspension was made perpetual in October 1779. Statutory oppressions being thus wiped away, we remain at present under those only imposed by the common law, or by our own acts of assembly. At the common law, *heresy* was a capital offence, punishable by burning. Its definition was left to the ecclesiastical judges, before whom the conviction was, till the statute of the 1 El. c. 1. circumscribed it, by declaring, that nothing should be deemed heresy, but what had been so determined by authority of the canonical scriptures, or by one of the four first general councils, or by some other council having for the grounds of their declaration the express and plain words of the scriptures. Heresy, thus circumscribed, being an offence at the common law, our act of assembly of October, 1777, c. 17. gives cognizance of it to the general court, by declaring, that the jurisdiction of that court shall be general in all matters at the common law. The execution is by the writ *De hæretico cumburendo.* By our own act of assembly of 1705, c. 30. if a person brought up in the Christian religion denies the being of a God, or the Trinity, or asserts there are more gods than one, or denies the christian religion to be true,

Digitized by Google

true, or the ſcriptures to be of divine authority, he is puniſhable on the firſt offence by incapacity to hold any office or employment eccleſiaſtical, civil, or military; on the ſecond by diſability to ſue, to take any gift or legacy, to be guardian, executor, or adminiſtrator, and by three years impriſonment without bail. A father's right to the cuſtody of his own children being founded in law on his right of guardianſhip, this being taken away, they may of courſe be ſevered from him, and put by the authority of the court, into more orthodox hands. This is a ſummary view of that religious ſlavery, under which a people have been willing to remain, who have laviſhed their lives and fortunes for the eſtabliſhment of their civil freedom. *The error ſeems not ſufficiently eradicated, that the operations of the mind, as well as the acts of the body, are ſubject to the coercion of the laws. But our rulers can have no authority over ſuch natural rights only as we have ſubmitted to them. The rights of conſcience we never ſubmitted, we could not ſubmit. We are anſwerable for them to our God. The legitimate powers of government extend to ſuch acts only as are injurious to others. But it does me no injury for my neighbor to ſay there are twenty Gods, or no God. It neither picks my pocket nor breaks my leg. If it be ſaid, his teſtimony in a court of juſtice cannot be relied on, reject it then, and be the ſtigma on him. Conſtraint may make him worſe by

* Furneaux paſſim.

Digitized by Google

by making him a hypocrite, but it will never make him a truer man. It may fix him obſtinately in his errors, but will not cure them. Reaſon and free inquiry are the only effectual agents againſt error. Give a looſe to them, they will ſupport the true religion, by bringing every falſe one to their tribunal, to the teſt of their inveſtigation. They are the natural enemies of error, and of error only. Had not the Roman government permitted free inquiry, Chriſtianity could never have been introduced. Had not free inquiry been indulged at the æra of the reformation, the corruptions of Chriſtianity could not have been purged away. If it be reſtrained now, the preſent corruptions will be protected and new ones encouraged. Was the government to preſcribe to us our medicine and diet, our bodies would be in ſuch keeping as our ſouls are now. Thus in France the emetic was once forbidden as a medicine, and the potatoe as an article of food. Government is juſt as infallible too when it fixes ſyſtems in phyſics. Galileo was ſent to the inquiſition for affirming that the earth was a ſphere: the government had declared it to be as flat as a trencher, and Galileo was obliged to abjure his error. This error however at length prevailed, the earth became a globe, and Deſcartes declared it was whirled round its axis by a vortex. The government in which he lived was wiſe enough to ſee that this was no queſtion of civil juriſdiction, or we ſhould all have been involved by authority in

Digitized by Google

in vortices. In fact, the vortices have been explored, and the Newtonian principle of gravitation is now more firmly eſtabliſhed, on the baſis of reaſon, than it would be were the government to ſtep in, and make it an article of neceſſary faith. Reaſon and experiment have been indulged, and error has fled before them. It is error alone which needs the ſupport of government. Truth can ſtand by itſelf. Subject opinion to coercion: whom will you make your inquiſitors? Fallible men; men governed by bad paſſions, by private as well as public reaſons. And why ſubject to its coercion? To produce uniformity. But is uniformity of opinion deſirable? No more than of face and ſtature. Introduce the bed of Procruſtes then, and as there is danger that the great men may beat the ſmall, make us all of a ſize, by lopping the former and ſtretching the latter. Difference of opinion is advantageous in religion. The ſeveral ſects perform the office of a cenſor morum over each other. Is uniformity attainable? Millions of innocent men, women, and children, ſince the introduction of Chriſtianity, have been burnt, tortured, fined, impriſoned; yet we have not advanced one inch toward uniformity. What has been the effect of coercion? To make one half the world fools, and the other half hypocrites. To ſupport roguery and error all over the earth. Let us reflect that it is inhabited by a thouſand millions of people. That theſe profeſs probably a thouſand different ſyſtems of religion. That ours is but one of that thouſand.

Digitized by Google

thouſand. That if there be but one right, and ours that one, we ſhould wiſh to ſee the 999 wandering ſects gathered into the fold of truth. But againſt ſuch a majority we cannot effect this by force. Reaſon and perſuaſion are the only practicable inſtruments. To make way for theſe, free inquiry muſt be indulged; how can we wiſh others to indulge it while we refuſe it ourſelves. But every ſtate, ſays an inquiſitor, has eſtabliſhed ſome religion. No two, ſay I, have eſtabliſhed the ſame. Is this a proof of the infallibility of eſtabliſhments? Our ſiſter ſtates of Pennſylvania and New York, however, have long ſubſiſted without any eſtabliſhment at all. The experiment was new and doubtful when they made it. It has anſwered beyond conception. They flouriſh infinitely. Religion is well ſupported; of various kinds, indeed, but all good enough; all ſufficient to preſerve peace and order: or if a ſect ariſes, whoſe tenets would ſubvert morals, good ſenſe has fair play, and reaſons and laughs it out of doors, without ſuffering the ſtate to be troubled with it. They do not hang more malefactors than we do. They are not more diſturbed with religious diſſenſions than we are. On the contrary, their harmony is unparalleled, and can be aſcribed to nothing but their unbounded tolerance, becauſe there is no other circumſtance in which they differ from every nation on earth. They have made the happy diſcovery, that the way to ſilence religious diſputes, is to take no notice of them. Let us too give this experiment fair play,

and

Digitized by Google

and get rid, while we may, of thoſe tyrannical laws. It is true, we are as yet ſecured againſt them by the ſpirit of the times. I doubt whether the people of this country would ſuffer an execution for hereſy, or a three years impriſonment for not comprehending the myſteries of the Trinity. But is the ſpirit of the people an infallible, a permanent reliance? Is it government? Is this the kind of protection we receive in return for the rights we give up? Beſides, the ſpirit of the times may alter, will alter. Our rulers will become corrupt, our people careleſs. A ſingle zealot may commence perſecutor, and better men be his victims. It can never be too often repeated, that the time for fixing every eſſential right on a legal baſis is while our rulers are honeſt, and ourſelves united. From the concluſion of this war we ſhall be going down hill. It will not then be neceſſary to reſort every moment to the people for ſupport. They will be forgotten, therefore, and their rights diſregarded. They will forget themſelves, but in the ſole faculty of making money, and will never think of uniting to effect a due reſpect for their rights. The ſhackles, therefore, which ſhall not be nocked off at the concluſion of this war, will remain on us long, will be made heavier and heavier, till our rights ſhall revive or expire in a convulſion.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY XVIII.

THE *particular* cuſtoms and manners that may happen to be received in that ſtate?

It is difficult to determine on the ſtandard by which the manners of a nation may be tried, whether *catholic*, or *particular*. It is more difficult for a native to bring to that ſtandard the manners of his own nation, familiarized to him by habit. There muſt doubtleſs be an unhappy influence on the manners of our people produced by the exiſtence of ſlavery among us. The whole commerce between maſter and ſlave is a perpetual exerciſe of the moſt boiſterous paſſions, the moſt unremitting deſpotiſm on the one part, and degrading ſubmiſſions on the other. Our children ſee this, and learn to imitate it; for man is an imitative animal. This quality is the germ of all education in him. From his cradle to his grave he is learning to do what he ſees others do. If a parent could find no motive either in his philanthropy or his ſelf-love, for reſtraining the intemperance of paſſion towards his ſlave, it ſhould always be a ſufficient one that his child is preſent. But generally it is not ſufficient. The parent ſtorms, the child looks on, catches the lineaments of wrath, puts on the ſame airs in the circle of ſmaller ſlaves, gives a looſe to the worſt of paſſions, and thus

Digitized by Google

thus nurſed, educated, and daily exerciſed in tyranny, cannot but be ſtamped by it with odious peculiarities. The man muſt be a prodigy who can retain his manners and morals undepraved by ſuch circumſtances. And with what execration ſhould the ſtateſman be loaded, who permitting one half the citizens thus to trample on the rights of the other, transforms thoſe into deſpots, and theſe into enemies, deſtroys the morals of the one part, and the amor patriæ of the other. For if a ſlave can have a country in this world, it muſt be any other in preference to that in which he is born to live and labor for another: in which he muſt lock up the faculties of his nature, contribute as far as depends on his individual endeavors to the evaniſhment of the human race, or entail his own miſerable condition on the endleſs generations proceeding from him. With the morals of the people, their induſtry alſo is deſtroyed. For in a warm climate, no man will labor for himſelf who can make another labor for him. This is ſo true, that of the proprietors of ſlaves a very ſmall proportion indeed are ever ſeen to labor. And can the liberties of a nation be thought ſecure when we have removed their only firm baſis, a conviction in the minds of the people that theſe liberties are of the gift of God? That they are not to be violated but with his wrath? Indeed I tremble for my country when I reflect that God is juſt; that his juſtice cannot ſleep for ever: that conſidering numbers, nature and natural means only, a revolution of the

Digitized by Google

wheel of fortune, an exchange of ſituation is among poſſible events: that it may become probable by ſupernatural interference! The Almighty has no attribute which can take ſide with us in ſuch a conteſt.—But it is impoſſible to be temperate and to purſue this ſubject through the various conſiderations of policy, of morals, of hiſtory natural and civil. We muſt be contented to hope they will force their way into every one's mind. I think a change already perceptible, ſince the origin of the preſent revolution. The ſpirit of the maſter is abating, that of the ſlave is riſing from the duſt, his condition mollifying, the way I hope preparing, under the auſpices of heaven, for a total emancipation, and that this is diſpoſed, in the order of events, to be with the conſent of the maſters, rather than by their extirpation.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY XIX.

THE preſent ſtate of manufactures, commerce, interior and exterior trade?

We never had an interior trade of any importance. Our exterior commerce has ſuffered very much from the beginning of the preſent conteſt. During this time we have manufactured within our families the moſt neceſſary articles of clothing. Thoſe of cotton will bear ſome compariſon with the ſame kinds of manufacture in Europe; but thoſe of wool, flax, and hemp are very coarſe, unſightly, and unpleaſant: and ſuch is our attachment to agriculture, and ſuch our preference for foreign manufactures, that be it wiſe or unwiſe, our people will certainly return as ſoon as they can, to the raiſing raw materials, and exchanging them for finer manufactures than they are able to execute themſelves.

The political economiſts of Europe have eſtabliſhed it as a principle that every ſtate ſhould endeavor to manufacture for itſelf: and this principle, like many others, we transfer to America, without calculating the difference of circumſtance which ſhould often produce a difference of reſult. In Europe the lands are either cultivated, or locked up againſt the cultivator. Manufacture muſt therefore be reſorted to of neceſſity not

Digitized by Google

not of choice, to ſupport the ſurplus of their people. But we have an immenſity of land courting the induſtry of the huſbandman. Is it beſt then that all our citizens ſhould be employed in its improvement, or that one half ſhould be called off from that to exerciſe manufactures and handicraft arts for the other? Thoſe who labor in the earth are the choſen people of God, if ever he had a choſen people, whoſe breaſts he has made his peculiar depoſit for ſubſtantial and genuine virtue. It is the focus in which he keeps alive that ſacred fire, which otherwiſe might eſcape from the face of the earth.—Corruption of morals in the maſs of cultivators is a phenomenon of which no age nor nation has furniſhed an example. It is the mark ſet on thoſe, who not looking up to heaven, to their own ſoil and induſtry, as does the huſbandman, for their ſubſiſtence, depend for it on the caſualties and caprice of cuſtomers. Dependence begets ſubſervience and venality, ſuffocates the germ of virtue, and prepares fit tools for the deſigns of ambition. This, the natural progreſs and conſequence of the arts, has ſometimes perhaps been retarded by accidental circumſtances: but generally ſpeaking, the proportion which the aggregate of the other claſſes of citizens bears in any ſtate to that of its huſbandmen, is the proportion of its unſound to its healthy parts, and is a good enough barometer whereby to meaſure its degree of corruption. While we have land to labor then, let us never wiſh to ſee our citizens occupied at

a

Digitized by Google

a work-bench, or twirling a diſtaff. Carpenters, maſons, ſmiths, are wanting in huſbandry: but for the general operation of manufacture, let our work-ſhops remain in Europe. It is better to carry proviſions and materials to workmen there, than bring them to the proviſions and materials, and with them their manners and principles. The loſs by the tranſportation of commodities acroſs the Atlantic will be made up in happineſs and permanence of government. The mobs of great cities add juſt as much to the ſupport of pure government, as ſores do to the ſtrength of the human body. It is the manners and ſpirit of the people which preſerve a republic in vigor. A degeneracy in theſe is a canker which ſoon eats to the heart of its laws and conſtitution.

QUERY XX.

A NOTICE of the commerce productions particular to the ſtate, and of thoſe objects which the inhabitants are obliged to get from Europe and from other parts of the world?

Before the preſent war we exported, communibus annis, according to the beſt information I can get, nearly as follows:

In

Digitized by Google

Articles.	Quantity.	Price in dollars.	Am. in dollars.
Tobacco	55,000 hhds. of 1000 lb.	at 30 d. per hhd.	1,650,000
Wheat	800,000 buſhels	at $\frac{5}{6}$ d. per buſhel.	666,666$\frac{2}{3}$
Indian corn	600,000 buſhels	at $\frac{1}{3}$ d. per buſhel.	200,000
Shipping	— —	— —	100,000
Maſts, planks, ſcantling, ſhingles, ſtaves	— —	— —	66,666$\frac{2}{3}$
Tar, pitch, turpentine	30,000 barrels	at 1$\frac{1}{3}$ d. per bar.	40,000
Peltry, viz. ſkins of deer, beavers, otters, muſkrats, raccoons, foxes	180 hhds. of 600 lb.	at $\frac{5}{12}$ d. per lb.	42,000
Pork	4,000 barrels	at 10 d. per bar.	40,000
Flaxſeed, hemp, cotton	— —	— —	8,000
Pit-coal, pig-iron	— —	— —	6,666$\frac{2}{3}$
Peas	5,000 buſhels	at $\frac{1}{3}$ d. per buſhel.	3,333$\frac{1}{3}$
Beef	1,000 barrels	at 3$\frac{1}{3}$ d. per bar.	3,333$\frac{1}{3}$
Sturgeon, white ſhad, herring	— —	— —	3,333$\frac{1}{3}$
Brandy from peaches and apples, and whiſkey	— —	— —	1,666$\frac{2}{3}$
Horſes	— —	— —	1,666$\frac{2}{3}$
This ſum is equal to 850,000l. Virginia money, 607,142 guineas.			2,833,333$\frac{1}{3}$ Dols.

Digitized by Google

In the year 1758 we exported ſeventy thouſand hogſheads of tobacco, which was the greateſt quantity ever produced in this country in one year. But its culture was faſt declining at the commencement of this war and that of wheat taken its place: and it muſt continue to decline on the return of peace. I ſuſpect that the change in the temperature of our climate has become ſenſible to that plant, which, to be good requires an extraordinary degree of heat. But it requires ſtill more indiſpenſably an uncommon fertility of ſoil: and the price which it commands at market will not enable the planter to produce this by manure. Was the ſupply ſtill to depend on Virginia and Maryland alone, as its culture becomes more difficult, the price would riſe, ſo as to enable the planter to ſurmount thoſe difficulties and to live. But the weſtern country on the Miſſiſippi, and the midlands of Georgia, having freſh and fertile lands in abundance, and a hotter ſun, will be able to underſell theſe two ſtates, and will oblige them to abandon the raiſing tobacco altogether. And a happy obligation for them it will be. It is a culture productive of infinite wretchedneſs. Thoſe employed in it are in a continual ſtate of exertion beyond the power of nature to ſupport. Little food of any kind is raiſed by them; ſo that the men and animals on theſe farms are badly fed, and the earth is rapidly impoveriſhed. The cultivation of wheat is the reverſe in every circumſtance. Beſides clothing the earth with herbage, and preſerving its fertility,

Digitized by Google

fertility, it feeds the laborers plentifully, requires from them only a moderate toil, except in the ſeaſon of harveſt, raiſes great numbers of animals for food and ſervice, and diffuſes plenty and happineſs among the whole. We find it eaſier to make an hundred buſhels of wheat than a thouſand weight of tobacco, and they are worth more when made. The weavil indeed is a formidable obſtacle to the cultivation of this grain with us. But principles are already known which muſt lead to a remedy. Thus a certain degree of heat, to wit, that of common air in ſummer, is neceſſary to hatch the egg. If ſubterranean granaries, or others, therefore, can be contrived below that temperature, the evil will be cured by cold. A degree of heat beyond that which hatches the egg we know will kill it. But in aiming at this we eaſily run into that which produces putrefaction. To produce putrefaction, however, three agents are requiſite, heat, moiſture, and the external air. If the abſenſe of any one of theſe be ſecured, the other two may ſafely be admitted. Heat is the one we want. Moiſture then, or external air, muſt be excluded. The former has been done by expoſing the grain in kilns to the action of fire, which produces heat, and extracts moiſture at the ſame time: the latter, by putting the grain into hogſheads, covering it with a coat of lime, and heading it up. In this ſituation its bulk produced a heat ſufficient to kill the egg; the moiſture is ſuffered to remain indeed, but the external air is excluded. A nicer

Digitized by Google

nicer operation yet has been attempted: that is, to produce an intermediate temperature of heat between that which kills the egg, and that which produces putrefaction. The threshing the grain as soon as it is cut, and laying it in its chaff in large heaps, has been found very near to hit this temperature, though not perfectly, nor always. The heap generates heat sufficient to kill most of the eggs, whilst the chaff commonly restrains it from rising into putrefaction. But all these methods abridge too much the quantity which the farmer can manage, and enable other countries to undersell him which are not infested with this insect. There is still a desideratum then to give with us decisive triumph to this branch of agriculture over that of tobacco. The culture of wheat, by enlarging our pasture, will render the Arabian horse an article of very considerable profit. Experience has shewn that ours is the particular climate of America where he may be raised without degeneracy. Southwardly the heat of the sun occasions a deficiency of pasture, and northwardly the winters are too cold for the short and fine hair, the particular sensibility and constitution of that race. Animals transplanted into unfriendly climates, either change their nature and acquire new fences against the new difficulties in which they are placed, or they multiply poorly and become extinct. A good foundation is laid for their propagation here by our possessing already great numbers of horses of that blood, and by a decided taste

Digitized by Google

and preference for them eſtabliſhed among the people. Their patience of heat without injury, their ſuperior wind, fit them better in this and the more ſouthern climates even for the drudgeries of the plough and waggon. Northwardly they will become an object only to perſons of taſte and fortune, for the ſaddle and light carriages. To thoſe, and for theſe uſes, their fleetneſs and beauty will recommend them. Beſides theſe there will be other valuable ſubſtitutes when the cultivation of tobacco ſhall be diſcontinued, ſuch as cotton in the eaſtern parts of the ſtate, and hemp and flax in the weſtern.

It is not eaſy to ſay what are the articles either of neceſſity, comfort, or luxury, which we cannot raiſe, and which we therefore ſhall be under a neceſſity of importing from abroad, as every thing hardier than the olive, and as hardy as the fig, may be raiſed here in the open air. Sugar, coffee and tea, indeed, are not between theſe limits; and habit having placed them among the neceſſaries of life with the wealthy part of our citizens, as long as theſe habits remain we muſt go for them to thoſe countries which are able to furniſh them.

QUERY

Digitized by Google

QUERY XXI.

THE weights, meaſures, and the currency of the hard money? Some details relating to exchange with Europe?

Our weights and meaſures are the ſame which are fixed by acts of parliament in England. How it has happened that in this as well as the other American ſtates the nominal value of coin, was made to differ from what it was in the country we had left, and to differ among ourſelves too, I am not able to ſay with certainty. I find that in 1631 our houſe of burgeſſes deſired of the privy council in England, a coin debaſed to twenty-five per cent. that in 1645 they forbid dealing by barter for tobacco, and eſtabliſhed the Spaniſh piece of eight at ſix ſhillings, as the ſtandard of their currency: that in 1655 they changed it to five ſhillings ſterling. In 1680 they ſent an addreſs to the king, in conſequence of which, by proclamation in 1683, he fixed the value of French crowns, rix-dollars and pieces of eight at ſix ſhillings, and the coin of New-England at one ſhilling. That in 1710, 1714, 1727, and 1762, other regulations were made, which will be better preſented to the eye ſtated in the form of a table as follows:

Guineas

Digitized by Google

	1710.	1714.	1727.	1762.
Guineas	— —	26/.		
Britiſh gold coin not milled, coined gold of Spain and France, chequins, Arabian gold, moidores of Portugal	— —	5/. the dwt.		
Coined gold of the empire	— —	5/. the dwt.	— —	4/3. the dwt.
Engliſh milled ſilver money, in proportion to the crown, at	— —	5/10.	6/3.	
Pieces of eight of Mexico, Seville, and Pillar, ducatoons of Flanders, French ecus, or ſilver Lois, cruſados of Portugal	3¼d. the dwt.	— —	4d. the dwt.	
Peru pieces, croſs dollars, and old rix dollars of the empire	3½d. the dwt.	— —	3¾d. the dwt.	
Old Britiſh ſilver coin not milled	— —	3¾d. the dwt.		

Digitized by Google

The firſt ſymptom of the depreciation of our preſent paper-money, was that of ſilver dollars ſelling at ſix ſhillings, which had before been worth but five ſhillings and nine-pence. The aſſembly thereupon raiſed them by law to ſix ſhillings. As the dollar is now likely to become the money unit of America, as it paſſes at this rate in ſome of our ſiſter ſtates, and as it facilitates their computation in pounds and ſhillings, & e converſo, this ſeems to be more convenient than its former denomination. But as this particular coin now ſtands higher than any other in the proportion of 133⅓ to 125, or 16 to 15, it will be neceſſary to raiſe the others in proportion.

QUERY XXII.

THE public income and expenſes?

The nominal amount of theſe varying conſtantly and rapidly, with the conſtant and rapid depreciation of our paper-money, it becomes impracticable to ſay what they are. We find ourſelves cheated in every eſſay by the depreciation intervening between the declaration of the tax and its actual receipt. It will therefore be more ſatisfactory to conſider what our income may be when we ſhall find means of collecting

Digitized by Google

lecting what our people may ſpare. I ſhould eſtimate the whole taxable property of this ſtate at an hundred millions of dollars, or thirty millions of pounds our money. One per cent. on this, compared with any thing we ever yet paid, would be deemed a very heavy tax. Yet I think that thoſe who manage well, and uſe reaſonable economy, could pay one and a half per cent. and maintain their houſehold comfortably in the mean time, without aliening any part of their principal, and that the people would ſubmit to this willingly for the purpoſe of ſupporting their preſent conteſt. We may ſay then, that we could raiſe, and ought to raiſe, from one million to one million and a half of dollars annually, that is from three hundred to four hundred and fifty thouſand pounds, Virginia money.

Of our expenſes it is equally difficult to give an exact ſtate, and for the ſame reaſon. They are moſtly ſtated in paper-money, which varying continually, the legiſlature endeavors at every ſeſſion, by new corrections, to adapt the nominal ſums to the value it is wiſhed they would bear. I will ſtate them therefore in real coin, at the point at which they endeavor to keep them.

	Dollars.
The annual expenſes of the general aſſembly are about	20,000
The governor	3,333⅓
The council of ſtate	10,666⅔
Their clerks	1,166⅔

Eleven

Digitized by Google

	Dollars.
Eleven judges	11,000
The clerk of the chancery	666⅔
The attorney general	1,000
Three auditors and a ſolicitor	5,333⅓
Their clerks	2,000
The treaſurer	2,000
His clerks	2,000
The keeper of the public jail	1,000
The public printer	1,666⅔
Clerks of the inferior courts	43,333⅓
Public levy: this is chiefly for the expenſes of criminal juſtice	40,000
County levy, for bridges, court-houſes, priſons, &c.	40,000
Members of congreſs	7,000
Quota of the federal civil liſt, ſuppoſed one-ſixth of about 78,000 dollars	13,000
Expenſes of collection, ſix per cent. on the above	12,310
The clergy receive only voluntary contributions: ſuppoſe them on an average one-eighth of a dollar a tythe on 200,000 tythes	25,000
Contingencies, to make round numbers not far from truth	7,523⅓
	250,000

Dollars, or 53,571 guineas. This eſtimate is excluſive of the military expenſe. That varies with the force

Digitized by Google

force actually employed, and in time of peace will probably be little or nothing. It is excluſive alſo of the public debts, which are growing while I am writing, and cannot therefore be now fixed. So it is of the maintenance of the poor, which being merely a matter of charity, cannot be deemed expended in the adminiſtration of government. And if we ſtrike out the 25,000 dollars for the ſervices of the clergy, which neither makes part of that adminiſtration, more than what is paid to phyſicians, or lawyers, and being voluntary, is either much or nothing as every one pleaſes, it leaves 225,000 dollars, equal to 48,208 guineas, the real coſt of the apparatus of government with us. This divided among the actual inhabitants of our country, comes to about two-fifths of a dollar, 2id. ſterling, or 42 ſols, the price which each pays annually for the protection of the reſidue of his property, and the other advantages of a free government. The public revenues of Great-Britain divided in like manner on its inhabitants would be 16 times greater. Deducting even the double of the expenſes of government, as before eſtimated, from the million and a half of dollars which we before ſuppoſed might be annually paid without diſtreſs, we may conclude that this ſtate can contribute one million of dollars annually towards ſupporting the federal army, paying the federal debt, building a federal navy, or opening roads, clearing rivers, forming ſafe ports, and other uſeful works.

To

Digitized by Google

To this eſtimate of our abilities, let me add a word as to the application of them. If, when cleared of the preſent conteſt, and of the debts with which that will charge us, we come to meaſure force hereafter with any European power. Such events are devoutly to be deprecated. Young as we are, and with ſuch a country before us to fill with people and with happineſs, we ſhould point in that direction the whole generative force of nature, waſting none of it in efforts of mutual deſtruction. It ſhould be our endeavor to cultivate the peace and friendſhip of every nation, even of that which has injured us moſt, when we ſhall have carried our point againſt her. Our intereſt will be to throw open the doors of commerce, and to knock off all its ſhackles, giving perfect freedom to all perſons for the vent of whatever they may chooſe to bring into our ports, and aſking the ſame in their's. Never was ſo much falſe arithmetic employed on any ſubject, as that which has been employed to perſuade nations that it is their intereſt to go to war. Were the money which it has coſt to gain, at the cloſe of a long war, a little town, or a little territory, the right to cut wood here, or catch fiſh there, expended in improving what they already poſſeſs, in making roads, opening rivers, building ports, improving the arts, and finding employment for their idle poor, it would render them much ſtronger, much wealthier and happier. This I hope will be our wiſdom. And, perhaps, to remove as much as poſſible the occaſions of making war, it

Digitized by Google

might be better for us to abandon the ocean altogether, that being the element whereon we ſhall be principally expoſed to joſtle with other nations; to leave to others to bring what we ſhall want, and carry what we can ſpare. This would make us invulnerable to Europe, by offering none of our property to their prize, and would turn all our citizens to the cultivation of the earth; and, I repeat it again, cultivators of the earth are the moſt virtuous and independent citizens. It might be time enough to ſeek employment for them at ſea, when the land no longer offers it. But the actual habits of our countrymen attach them to commerce. They will exerciſe it for themſelves. Wars then muſt ſometimes be our lot; and all the wiſe can do, will be to avoid that half of them which would be produced by our own follies and our own acts of injuſtice; and to make for the other half the beſt preparations we can. Of what nature ſhould theſe be? A land army would be uſeleſs for offence, and not the beſt nor ſafeſt inſtrument of defence. For either of theſe purpoſes, the ſea is the field on which we ſhould meet an European enemy. On that element it is neceſſary we ſhould poſſeſs ſome power. To aim at ſuch a navy as the greater nations of Europe poſſeſs, would be a fooliſh and wicked waſte of the energies of our countrymen. It would be to pull on our own heads that load of military expenſe which makes the European laborer go ſupperleſs to bed, and moiſtens his bread with the ſweat of his brows. It will be enough

Digitized by Google

enough if we enable ourſelves to prevent inſults from thoſe nations of Europe which are weak on the ſea, becauſe circumſtances exiſt, which render even the ſtronger ones weak as to us. Providence has placed their richeſt and moſt defenſeleſs poſſeſſions at our door; has obliged their moſt precious commerce to paſs as it were in review before us. To protect this, or to aſſail, a ſmall part only of their naval force will even be riſked acroſs the Atlantic. The dangers to which the elements expoſe them here are too well known, and the greater dangers to which they would be expoſed at home were any general calamity to involve their whole fleet. They can attack us by detachment only; and it will ſuffice to make ourſelves equal to what they may detach. Even a ſmaller force than they may detach will be rendered equal or ſuperior by the quickneſs with which any check may be repaired with us, while loſſes with them will be irreparable till too late. A ſmall naval force then is ſufficient for us, and a ſmall one is neceſſary. What this ſhould be, I will not undertake to ſay. I will only ſay it ſhould by no means be ſo great as we are able to make it. Suppoſe the million of dollars, or 300,000 pounds, which Virginia could annually ſpare without diſtreſs, to be applied to the creating a navy. A ſingle year's contribution would build, equip, man, and ſend to ſea a force which ſhould carry 300 guns. The reſt of the confederacy, exerting themſelves in the ſame proportion, would equip in the ſame time 1500 guns more.

So

Digitized by Google

So that one year's contributions would fet up a navy of 1800 guns. The Britiſh ſhips of the line average 76 guns; their frigates 38. 1800 guns then would form a fleet of 30 ſhips, 18 of which might be of the line, and 12 frigates. Allowing 8 men, the Britiſh average, for every gun, their annual expenſe, including ſubſiſtence, clothing, pay, and ordinary repairs, would be about 1280 dollars for every gun, or 2,304,000 dollars for the whole. I ſtate this only as one year's poſſible exertion, without deciding whether more or leſs than a year's exertion ſhould be thus applied.

The value of our lands and ſlaves, taken conjunctly, doubles in about twenty years. This ariſes from the multiplication of our ſlaves, from the extenſion of culture, and increaſed demand for lands. The amount of what may be raiſed will of courſe riſe in the ſame proportion.

QUERY XXIII.

THE hiſtories of the ſtate, the memorials publiſhed in its name in the time of its being a colony, and the pamphlets relating to its interior or exterior affairs, preſent or ancient?

Captain

Digitized by Google

Captain Smith, who next to Sir Walter Raleigh may be conſidered as the founder of our colony, has written its hiſtory, from the firſt adventures to it till the year 1624. He was a member of the council and afterwards preſident of the colony; and to his efforts principally may be aſcribed its ſupport againſt the oppoſition of the natives. He was honeſt, ſenſible, and well informed; but his ſtyle is barbarous and uncouth. His hiſtory, however, is almoſt the only ſource from which we derive our knowledge of the infancy of our ſtate.

The reverend William Stith, a native of Virginia, and preſident of its college, has alſo written the hiſtory of the ſame period, in a large octavo volume of ſmall print. He was a man of claſſical learning, and very exact, but of no taſte in ſtyle. He is inelegant, therefore, and his details often too minute to be tolerable, even to a native of the country, whoſe hiſtory he writes.

Beverly, a native alſo, has run into the other extreme; he has compriſed our hiſtory, from the firſt propoſitions of Sir Walter Raleigh to the year 1700, in the hundredth part of the ſpace which Stith employs for the fourth part of the period.

Sir William Keith has taken it up at its earlieſt period, and continued it to the year 1725. He is agreeable enough in ſtyle, and paſſes over events of little importance. Of courſe he is ſhort, and would be preferred by a foreigner.

During

Digitized by Google

During the regal government, ſome conteſt aroſe on the exaction of an illegal fee by governor Dinwiddie, and doubtleſs there were others on other occaſions not at preſent recollected. It is ſuppoſed, that theſe are not ſufficiently intereſting to a foreigner to merit a detail.

The petition of the council and burgeſſes of Virginia to the king, their memorial to the lords, and remonſtrance to the commons in the year 1764, began the preſent conteſt; and theſe having proved ineffectual to prevent the paſſage of the ſtamp-act, the reſolutions of the houſe of burgeſſes of 1765 were paſſed, declaring the independence of the people of Virginia on the parliament of Great-Britain, in matters of taxation. From that time till declaration of independence by congreſs in 1776, their journals are filled with aſſertions of the public rights.

The pamphlets publiſhed in this ſtate on the controverted queſtion were,

1766, An Inquiry into the rights of the Britiſh colonies, by Richard Bland.

1769, The Monitor's Letter, by Dr. Arthur Lee.

1774, *A ſummary View of the rights of Britiſh America.

1774, Conſiderations, &c. by Robert Carter Nicholas.

Since the declaration of independence this ſtate has had no controverſy with any other, except with that of

* By the author of theſe notes.

Digitized by Google

of Pennſylvania, on their common boundary. Some papers on this ſubject paſſed between the executive and legiſlative bodies of the two ſtates, the reſult of which was a happy accommodation of their rights.

To this account of our hiſtorians, memorials, and pamphlets, it may not be unuſeful to add a chronological catalogue of American ſtate-papers, as far as I have been able to collect their titles. It is far from being either complete or correct. Where the title alone, and not the paper itſelf, has come under my obſervation, I cannot anſwer for the exactneſs of the date. Sometimes I have not been able to find any date at all, and ſometimes have not been ſatisfied that ſuch a paper exiſts. An extenſive collection of papers of this deſcription has been for ſome time in a courſe of preparation by a gentleman* fully equal to the taſk, and from whom, therefore, we may hope ere long to receive it. In the mean time accept this as the reſult of my labors, and as cloſing the tedious detail which you have ſo undeſignedly drawn upon yourſelf.

Pro Johanne Caboto et filiis ſuis ſuper terra incognita inveſtiganda. 1498, Mar. 5. 11. H. 7. 12. Ry. 595. 3. Hakl.

Billa ſignata anno 13. Henrici Septimi. 3. Hakluyt's voiages 5. 1498, Feb. 3. 13. H. 7.

De poteſtatibus ad terras incognitas inveſtigandum. 13. Rymer. 37. 1502, Dec. 19. 18. H. 7.

Commiſſion

* Mr. Hazard.

Digitized by Google

1540, Oct. 17. Commiſſion de François I. à Jacques Cartier pour l'eſtabliſſement du Canada. L'Eſcarbot. 397. 2. Mem. Am. 416.

1548. 2. E. 6. An act againſt the exaction of money, or any other thing, by any officer for licenſe to traffique into Iceland and Newfoundland, made in An. 2. Edwardi ſexti. 3. Hakl. 131.

1578, June 11. 20. El. The letters-patent granted by her Majeſtie to Sir Humphrey Gilbert, knight, for the inhabiting and planting of our people in America. 3. Hakl. 135.

1583. Feb. 6. Letters-patent of Queen Elizabeth to Adrian Gilbert and others, to diſcover the north-weſt paſſage to China. 3. Hakl. 96.

1584, Mar. 25. 26. El. The letters-patent granted by the Queen's Majeſtie to M. Walter Raleigh, now knight, for the diſcovering and planting of new lands and countries, to continue the ſpace of ſix years and no more. 3 Hakl. 243.

Mar. 7. 31. El. An aſſignment by Sir Walter Raleigh for continuing the action of inhabiting and planting his people

Digitized by Google

ple in Virginia. Hakl. 1ſt. ed. publ. in 1589, p. 815.

Lettres de Lieutenant General de l'Acadie & pays circonvoiſins pour le Sieur de Monts. L'Eſcarbot. 417. 1603, Nov. 8.

Letters-patent to Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Somers and others, for two ſeveral colonies to be made in Virginia and other parts of America. Stith. Apend. No. I. 1606, Apr. 10. 4. Jac. 1.

An ordinance and conſtitution enlarging the council of the two colonies in Virginia and America, and augmenting their authority, M. S. 1607, Mar. 9. 4. Jac. 1.

The ſecond charter to the treaſurer and company for Virginia, erecting them into a body politick. Stith. Ap. 2. 1609, May. 23. 7. Jac. 1.

Letters-patent to the E. of Northampton, granting part of the iſland of Newfoundland. 1. Harris. 861. 1610, Apr. 10. Jac. 1.

A third charter to the treaſurer and company for Virginia. Stith. Ap. 3. 1611, Mar. 12. 9. Jac. 1.

A commiſſion to Sir Walter Raleigh. Qu.? 1617, Jac. 1.

Commiſſio ſpecialis concernens le garbling herbæ Nocotianæ. 17. Rym. 190. 1620, Apr. 7. 18. Jac. 1.

Digitized by Google

1620, June 29. 18. Jac 1. A proclamation for reſtraint of the diſordered trading of tobacco. 17. Rym. 233.

1620, Nov. 3. Jac. 1. A grant of New-England to the council of Plymouth.

1621, July 24. Jac. 1. An ordinance and conſtitution of the treaſurer, council and company in England, for a council of ſtate and general aſſembly in Virginia. Stith. Ap. 4.

1612, Sept. 10. 20. Jac. 1. A grant of Nova Scotia to Sir William Alexander. 2. Mem. de l'Amerique. 193.

1622, Nov. 6. 20. Jac. 1. A proclamation prohibiting interloping and diſorderly trading to New-England in America, 17. Rym. 416.

1623, May 9. 21. Jac. 1. De Commiſſione ſpeciali Willelmo Jones militi directa. 17. Rym. 490.

1623. A grant to Sir Edmund Ployden, of New Albion, Mentioned in Smith's examination. 82.

1624, July 15. 22. Jac. 1. De commiſſione Henrico vicecomiti Mandevill & aliis. 17. Rym. 609.

1624, Aug. 26. 22. Jac. 1. De commiſſione ſpeciali concernenti gubernationem in Virginia. 17. Rym. 618.

1624, Sept. 29. 22. Jac. 1. A proclamation concerning tobacco. 17. Rym. 621.

De

Digitized by Google

De conceſſione demiſs, Edwardo Ditchfield et aliis. 17. Rym. 633. 1624, Nov. 9. 22. Jac. 1.

A proclamation for the utter prohibition of the importation and uſe of all tobacco which is not of the proper growth of the colony of Virginia and the Somer iſlands, or one of them. 17. Rym. 668. 1625, Mar. 2. 22. Jac. 1.

De commiſſione directa Georgio Yardely militi et aliis. 18. Rym. 311. 1625, Mar. 4. 1. Car. 1.

Proclamation de herba Nicotianâ. 18. Rym. 19. 1625, Apr. 9. 1. Car. 1.

A proclamation for ſetlinge the plantation of Virginia. 18. Rym. 27. 1625, May 13. 1. Car. 1.

A grant of the ſoil, barony, and domains of Nova Scotia to Sir Wm. Alexander of Minſtrie. 2. Mem. Am. 226. 1625, July 12.

Commiſſio directa Johanni Wolſtenholme militi at aliis. 18. Ry. 831. 1626, Jan. 31. 2. Car. 1.

A proclamation touching tobacco. Ry. 848. 1626, Feb. 17. 2. Car. 1.

A grant of Maſſachuſett's bay by the council of Plymouth to Sir Henry Roſwell and others. 1627, Mar. 19. qu? 2. Car. 1.

De conceſſione commiſſionis ſpecialis 1627, Mar. 26. 3. Car. 1.

Digitized by Google

cialis pro concilio in Virginia. 18. Ry. 980.

1627, Mar. 30. 3. Car. 1. De proclamatione de ſignatione de tobacco. 18. Ry. 886.

1627. Aug. 9. 3. Car. 1. De proclamatione pro ordinatione de tobacco. 18. Ry. 920.

1628, Mar. 4. 3. Car. 1. A confirmation of the grant of Maſſachuſett's bay by the Crown.

1629. Aug. 19. The capitulation of Quebec. Champlain part. 2. 216. 2. Mem. Am. 489.

1630, Jan. 6. 5. Car. 1. A proclamation concerning tobacco. 19. Ry. 235.

1630, April 30. Conveyance of Novaſcotia (Port-royal excepted) by Sir William Alexander to Sir Claude St. Etinnee Lord of la Tour and of Uarre and to his ſon Sir Charles de St. Etinne Lord of St. Denniſcourt, on condition that they continue ſubjects to the king of Scotland under the great ſeal of Scotland.

1630, 31. Nov. 24. 6. Car. 1. A proclamation forbidding the diſorderly trading with the ſavages in New-England in America, eſpecially the furniſhing the natives in thoſe and other parts of America by

Digitized by Google

by the Engliſh with weapons and habiliments of warre. 19. Ry. 210. 3. Ruſhw. 82.

A proclamation prohibiting the felling arms, &c. to the ſavages in America. Mentioned 3. Ruſhw. 75. 1630, Dec. 5. 6. Car. 1.

A grant of Connecticut by the council of Plymouth to the E. of Warwick. 1630, Car. 1.

A confirmation by the crown of the grant of Connecticut [ſaid to be in the petty-bag office in England.] 1630, Car. 1.

A conveiance of Connecticut by the E. of Warwick to Lord Say and Seal and others. Smith's examination, appendix No. 1. 1631, Mar. 19. 6. Car. 1.

A ſpecial commiſſion to Edward Earle of Dorſett and others for the better plantation of the colony of Virginia. 19. Ry. 301. 1631, June 29. 7. Car. 1.

Littere continentes promiſſionem regis ad tardenum caſtrum et habitationem de Kebec in Canada ad regem Francorum. 19. Ry. 303. 1631, June 29. 7. Car. 1.

Traité entre le roy Louis XIII. et Charles roi d'Angleterre pour 1632, Mar. 29. 8. Car. 1.

la

Digitized by Google

la reſtitution de la nouvelle France, la Cadie et Canada et des navires et merchandiſes pris de part et d'autre. Fait a St. Germain, 19. Ry. 361. 2. Mem. Am. 5.

1632, June 20. 8. Car. 1. A grant of Maryland to Cæcilius Calvert, baron of Baltimore in Ireland.

1633, July 3. 9. Car. 1. A petition of the planters of Virginia againſt the grant of Lord Baltimore.

1633, July 3. Order of council upon the diſpute between the Virginia planters and lord Baltimore. Votes of repres. of Pennſylvania. V.

1633, Aug. 13. 9. Car. 1. A proclamation to prevent abuſes growing by the unordered retailing of tobacco. Mentioned 3. Ruſhw. 191.

1633, Sept. 23. 9. Car. 1. A ſpecial commiſſion to Thomas Young to ſearch, diſcover and find out what parts are not yet inhabited in Virginia and America and other parts thereunto adjoining. 19. Ry. 372.

1633, Oct. 13. 9. Car. 1. A proclamation for preventing of the abuſes growing by the unordered retailing of tobacco. 19. Ry. 474.

A

Digitized by Google

A proclamation reſtraining the abuſive venting of tobacco. 19. Rym. 522. — 1633, Mar. 13. Car. I.

A proclamation concerning the landing of tobacco, and alſo forbidding the planting thereof in the king's dominions. 19. Ry. 553. — 1634, May 19. 10. Car. I.

A commiſſion to the Archbiſhop of Canterbury and 11 others, for governing the American colonies. — 1634. Car. I.

A commiſſion concerning tobacco. M. S. — 1634, June 19. 10. Car. I.

A commiſſion from Lord Say, and Seal, and others, to John Winthrop to be governor of Connecticut. Smith's app. — 1635, July 18. 11. Car. I.

A grant to Duke Hamilton. — 1635, Car. I.

De commiſſione ſpeciali Johnni Harvy militi pro meliori regemine coloniae in Virginia. 20. Ry. 3. — 1636, Apr. 2. 12. Car. I.

A proclamation concerning tobacco. Title in 3. Ruſh. 617. — 1637, Mar. 14. Car. I.

De commiſſione ſpeciali Georgio domino Goring et aliis conceſsâ concernente venditionem de tobacco abſque licentiâ ragiâ. 20. Ry. 116. — 1636-7, Mar. 16. 12. Car. I.

A proclamation againſt diſorderly — 1637, Apr. 30. 13. Car. I.

tranſporting

Digitized by Google

transporting his Majesty's subjects to the plantations within the parts of America. 20. Ry. 143. 3. Rush. 409.

1637, May. 1. 13. Car. 1. An order of the privy council to stay 8 ships now in the Thames from going to New England. 3. Rush. 409.

1637. Car. 1. A warrant of the Lord Admiral to stop unconformable ministers from going beyond sea. 3. Rush. 410.

1638, Apr. 4. Car. 1. Order of council upon Claiborne's petition against Lord Baltimore. Votes of representatives of Pennsylvania. vi.

1638, Apr. 6. 14. Car. 1. An order of the king and council that the attorney-general draw up a proclamation to prohibit transportation of passengers to New England without license. 3. Rush. 718.

1638, May 1. 14. Car. 1. A proclamation to restrain the transporting of passengers and provisions to New England without license. 20. Ry. 223.

1639, Mar. 25. Car. 1. A proclamation concerning tobacco. Title 4. Rush. 1060.

1639, Aug. 19. 15. Car. 1. A proclamation declaring his majesty's pleasure to continue his commission and letters-patents for licensing

Digitized by Google

cenſing retailers of tobacco. 20. Ry. 348.

De commiſſione ſpeciali Henrico Aſhton armigero et aliis ad amovendum Henricum Hawley gubernatorem de Barbadoes. 20. Ry. 357. 1639, Dec. 15. 16. Car. 1.

A proclamation concerning retailers of tobacco. 4. Ruſh. 966. 1639, Car. 1.

De conſtitutione gubernatories et concilii pro Virginia. 20. Ry. 484. 1641, Aug. 9. 17. Car. 1.

Articles of union and confederacy entered into by Maſſachuſetts, Plymouth, Connecticut and New-Haven. 1. Neale. 223. 1643, Car. 1.

Deed from George Fenwick to the old Connecticut juriſdiction. 1644, Car. 1.

An ordinance of the lords and commons aſſembled in parliament, for exempting from cuſtom and impoſition all commodities exported for, or imported from New-England, which has been very proſperous and without any public charge to this ſtate, and is likely to prove very happy for the propagation of the goſpel

Digitized by Google

in thoſe parts. Tit. in Amer. library 90. 5. No date. But ſeems by the neighboring articles to have been in 1644.

1644, June 20. Car. 2. An act for charging of tobacco brought from New-England with cuſtom and exciſe. Title in American library. 99. 8.

1644, Aug. 1. Car. 2. An act for the advancing and regulating the trade of this commonwealth. Tit. Amer. libr. 99. 9.

Sept. 18. 1. Car. 2. Grant of the northern neck of Virginia to Lord Hopton: Lord Jermyn, Lord Culpeper, Sir John Berkley, Sir William Moreton, Sir Dudly Wyatt, and Thomas Culpeper.

1650, Oct. 3. 2. Car. 2. An act prohibiting trade with the Barbadoes, Virginia, Bermudas and Antego. Scobell's acts. 1027.

1650. Car. 2. A declaration of Lord Willoughby, governor of Barbadoes, and of his council, againſt an act of parliament of 3d of October 1650. 4. Polit. regiſter. 2. cited from 4. Neal. hiſt. of the Puritans. App. No. 1. but not there.

1650. Car. 2. A final ſettlement of boundaries

Digitized by Google

ries between the Dutch New Netherlands and Connecticut.

Inſtructions for Captain Robert Dennis, Mr. Richard Bennet, Mr. Thomas Stagge, and Captain William Claibourne, appointed commiſſioners for the reducing of Virginia and the inhabitants thereof to their due obedience to the commonwealth of England. 1. Thurloe's ſtate papers. 197. 1651, Sept. 26. 3. Car. 2.

An act for increaſe of ſhipping and encouragement of the navigation of this nation. Scobell's acts. 1449. 1651, Oct. 9. 3. Car. 2.

Articles agreed on and concluded at James citie in Virginia for the ſurrendering and ſettling of that plantation under the obedience and government of the commonwealth of England by the commiſſioners of the council of ſtate, by authoritie of the Parliament of England, and by the grand aſſembly of the governor, council, and burgeſſe of that ſtate M. S. [Ante. p. 206.] 1651-2, Mar. 12. 4. Car. 2.

An act of indempnitie made at 1651-2, Mar. 12. 4. Car. 2.

the

Digitized by Google

the surrender of the countrey [of Virginia.] [Ante. p. 206.]

1654, Aug. 16. Capitulation de Port-Royal. Mem. Am. 507.

1655, Car. 2. A proclamation of the protector relating to Jamaica. 3. Thurl. 75.

1655, Sept. 26. 7. Car. 2. The protector to the commissioners of Maryland. A letter. 4. Thurl. 55.

1655, Oct. 8. 7. Car. 2. An instrument made at the council of Jamaica, Oct. 8, 1655, for the better carrying on of affairs there. 4 Thurl. 17.

1655, Nov. 3. Treaty of Westminster between France and England. 6. corps diplom. part 2. p. 121. 2. Mem. Am. 10.

1656, Mar. 27. 8. Car. 2. The assembly at Barbadoes to the protector. 4. Thurl. 651.

1656, Aug. 9. A grant by Cromwell to Sir Charles de Saint Etinne, a baron of Scotland, Crowne and Temple. A French translation of it. 2. Mem. Am. 511.

1656, Car. 2. A paper concerning the advancement of trade. 5. Thurl. 80.

1656, Car. 2. A brief narration of the English rights to the Northern parts of America. 5. Thurl. 81.

1656, Oct. 10. 8. Car. 2. Mr. R. Bennet and Mr. S. Matthew to Secretary Thurlow. 5. Thurl. 482.

Objections

Digitized by Google

Objections againſt the Lord Baltimore's patent, and reaſons why the governor of Maryland ſhould not be put into his hands. 5. Thurl. 482. 1656, Oct. 10. 8. Car. 2.

A paper relating to Maryland. 5. Thurl. 483. 1656, Oct. 10. 8. Car. 2.

A breviet of the proceedings of the Lord Baltimore and his officers and compliers in Maryland, againſt the authority of the parliament of the commonwealth of England and againſt his highneſs the lord protector's authority, laws and government. 5. Thurl. 486. 1656, Oct. 10. 8. Car. 2.

The aſſembly of Virginia to ſecretary Thurlow. 5. Thurl. 497. 1656, Oct. 15. 8. Car. 2.

The governor of Barbadoes to the protector. 6. Thurl. 169. 1657, Apr. 4. 9. Car. 2.

Petition of the general court at Hartford upon Connecticut for a charter. Smith's exam. App. 4. 1661, Car. 2.

Charter of the colony of Connecticut. Smith's exam. App. 6. 1662, Apr. 23. 14. Car. 2.

The firſt charter granted by Charles II. to the proprietaries of Carolina, to wit, to the Earl of Clarendon, Duke of Albemarle, 1662-3, Mar. 24. Apr. 4. 15, Car. 2.

Digitized by Google

Albemarle, Lord Craven, Lord Berkley, Lord Aſhley, Sir George Carteret, Sir William Berkeley, and Sir John Colleton. 4. Mem. Am. 554.

1664, Feb. 10. The conceſſions and agreement of the lords proprietors of the province of New Cæſarea, or New-Jerſey, to and with all and every of the adventurers and all ſuch as ſhall ſettle or plant there. Smith's New-Jerſey. App. 1.

1664, Mar. 12. 20. Car. 2. A grant of the colony of New-York to the Duke of York.

1664, Apr. 26. 16. Car. 2. A commiſſion to Colonel Nichols and others to ſettle diſputes in New England. Hutch. Hiſt. Maſſ. Bay. App. 537.

1664, Apr. 26. The commiſſion of Sir Robert Carre and others to put the Duke of York in poſſeſſion of New-York, New-Jerſey, and all other lands thereunto appertaining.

Sir Robert Carre and other's proclamation to the inhabitants of New-York, New-Jerſey, &c. Smith's N. J. 36.

1664, June 23, 24. 16. C. 2. Deeds of leaſe and releaſe of New-Jerſey by the Duke of York

Digitized by Google

York to Lord Berkley and Sir George Carteret.

A conveyance of the Delaware counties to William Penn.

Letters between Stuyvesant and Colonel Nichols on the English right. Smith's N. J. 37—42. 1664, Aug. 19-29, 30, 24. Aug. 25. Sept. 4.

Treaty between the English and Dutch for the surrender of the New-Netherlands. Sm. N. J. 42. 1664, Aug. 27.

Nicoll's commission to Sir Robert Carre to reduce the Dutch on Delaware bay. Sm. N. J. 47. Sept. 3.

Instructions to Sir Robert Carre for reducing of Delaware bay and settling the people there under his majesty's obedience. Sm. N. J. 47.

Articles of capitulation between Sir Robert Carre and the Dutch and Sweeds on Delaware bay and Delaware river. Sm. N. J. 49. 1664, Oct. 1.

The determination of the commissioners of the boundary between the Duke of York and Connecticut. Sm. Ex. Ap. 9. 1664, Dec. 1. 16.

The

Digitized by Google

1664. The New Haven caſe. Smith's Ex. Ap. 20.

1665, June 13-24. 17. C. 2. The ſecond charter granted by Charles II. to the ſame proprietors of Carolina. 4. Mem. Am. 586.

1666, Jan. 26. Declaration de guerre par la France contre l'Angleterre. 3. Mem. Am. 123.

1666, Feb. 9. 17. Car. 2. Declaration of war by the king of England againſt the king of France.

1667, July 31. The treaty of peace between France and England made at Breda. 7. Corps Dipl. part 1. p. 41. 2. Mem. Am. 32.

1667, July 31. The treaty of peace and alliance between England and the United Provinces made at Breda. 7. Cor. Dip. p. 1. p. 44. 2. Mem. Am. 40.

1667-8, Feb. 17. Acte de la ceſſion de l'Acadie au roi de France. 2. Mem. Am. 40.

1668, April 21. Directions from the governor and council of New York for a better ſettlement of the government on Delaware. Sm. N. J. 51.

1668. Lovelace's order for cuſtoms at the Hoarkills. Sm. N. J. 55.

A

Digitized by Google

A confirmation of the grant of the Northern neck of Virginia to the Earl of St. Alban's, Lord Berkeley, Sir William Moreton and John Tretheway. 16—May 8. 21. Car. 2.

Incorporation of the town of Newcaſtle or Amſtell. 1672.

A demiſe of the colony of Virginia to the Earl of Arlington and Lord Culpeper for 31 years. M. S. 1673, Feb. 25. 25. Car. 2.

Treaty at London between king Charles II. and the Dutch. Article VI. 1673—4.

Remonſtrances againſt the two grants of Charles II. of Northern and Southern Virginia. Ment. Beverly. 65.

Sir George Carteret's inſtructions to Governor Carteret. 1674, July 13.

Governor Andros's proclamation on taking poſſeſſion of Newcaſtle for the Duke of York. Sm. N. J. 78. 1674, Nov. 9.

A proclamation for prohibiting the importation of commodities of Europe into any of his Majeſty's plantations in Africa, Aſia, or America, which were not laden in England: 1675, Oct. 1. 27. Car. 2.

Digitized by Google

land: and for putting all other laws relating to the trade of the plantations in effectual execution.

1676, Mar. 3. The conceſſions and agreements of the proprietors, freeholders and inhabitants of the province of Weſt-New-Jerſey in America Sm. N. J. App. 2.

1676, July 1. A deed quintipartite for the diviſion of New-Jerſey.

1676, Aug. 18. Letter from the proprietors of New-Jerſey to Richard Hartſhorne. Sm. N. J. 83.

Proprietors inſtructions to James Waſſe and Richard Hartſhorne. Sm. N. J. 83.

1676, Oct. 10. 28. Car. 2. The charter of king Charles II. to his ſubjects of Virginia. M. S.

1676. Cautionary epiſtle from the truſtees of Byllinge's part of New-Jerſey. Sm. N. J. 84.

1677, Sept. 10. Indian deed for the lands between Rankokas creek and Timber creek, in New-Jerſey.

1677, Sept. 27. Indian deed for the lands from Oldman's creek to Timber creek, in New-Jerſey.

1677, Oct. 10. Indian deed for the lands from Rankokas creek to Aſſunpink

Digitized by Google

pink creek, in New-Jerſey.

The will of Sir George Carteret, ſole proprietor of Eaſt Jerſey, ordering the ſame to be ſold. 1678, Dec. 5.

An order of the king in council for the better encouragement of all his majeſty's ſubjects in their trade to his majeſty's plantations, and for the better information of all his majeſty's loving ſubjects in theſe matters.—Lond. Gaz. No 1596. Title in Amer. library. 134. 6. 1680, Feb. 16.

Arguments againſt the cuſtoms demanded in New-Weſt-Jerſey by the governor of New-York, addreſſed to the Duke's commiſſioners. Sm. N. J. 117. 1680.

Extracts of proceedings of the committe of trade and plantations, copies of letters, reports, &c. between the board of trade, Mr. Penn, Lord Baltimore and Sir John Werden, in the behalf of the Duke of York and the ſettlement of the Pennſylvania boundaries by the L. C. J. North. Votes of Repr. Pennſyl. vii.—xiii. 1680, June 14. 23. 25. Oct. 16. Nov. 4. 8. 11. 18. 20. 23. Dec. 16. 1680-1, Jan. 15. 22. Feb. 24.

A grant of Pennſylvania to William 1681, Mar. 4. Car. 2.

Digitized by Google

liam Penn. Votes of Repreſen. Pennſyl. xviii.

1681. Apr. 2. The king's declaration to the inhabitants and planters of the province of Pennſylvania. Vo. Repr. Penn. xxiv.

1681, July 11. Certain conditions or conceſſions agreed upon by William Penn, proprietary and governor of Pennſylvania, and thoſe who are the adventurers and purchaſers in the ſame province. Votes of Rep. Pennſylv. xxiv.

1681, Nov. 9. Fundamental laws of the province of Weſt-New-Jerſey. Sm. N. J. 126.

1681-2, Jan. 14. The methods of the commiſſioners for ſettling and regulation of land in New-Jerſey. S. M. N. J. 130.

1681-2, Feb. 1. 2. Indentures of leaſe and releaſe by the executors of Sir George Carteret to William Penn and 11 others, conveying Eaſt Jerſey.

1682, Mar. 14. The Duke of York's freſh grant of Eaſt-New-Jerſey to the 24 proprietors.

1682, Apr. 25. The frame of the government of the province of Pennſylvania, in

Digitized by Google

in America. Votes of Repr. Penn. xxvii.

The Duke of York's deed for Pennſylvania. Vo. Repr. Penn. xxxv. 1682, Aug. 21.

The Duke of York's deed of feoffment of Newcaſtle and twelve miles circle to William Penn. Vo. Repr. Penn. 1682, Aug. 24.

The Duke of York's deed of feoffment of a tract of land 12 miles ſouth from Newcaſtle to the Whorekills, to William Penn. Vo. Repr. Penn. xxxvii. 1682, Aug. 24.

A commiſſion to Thomas Lord Culpeper to be lieutenant and governor-general of Virginia. M. S. 1682, Nov. 27. 34 Car. 2.

An act of union for annexing and uniting of the counties of Newcaſtle, Jones's and Whorekill's alias Deal, to the province of Pennſylvania, and of naturalization of all foreigners in the province and counties aforeſaid. 1682, 10th mon. 6th day.

An act of ſettlement. 1682, Dec. 6.

The frame of the government of the province of Pennſylvania and territories thereunto annexed in America. 1683, Apr. 2.

Proceedings

Digitized by Google

1683, Apr. 17. 27. 1684, Feb. 12. 1685, Mar. 17.
May 30. July 2, 16, 23. Aug. 18. 26.
June 12. Sept. 30. Sept. 2.
Dec. 9. Oct. 8, 17, 31.
Nov. 7.

Proceedings of the committee of trade and plantations in the diſpute between Lord Baltimore and Mr. Penn. Vo. R. p. xiii—xviii.

1683, July 17. A commiſſion of the proprietors of Eaſt-New-Jerſey to Robert Barclay to be governor. Sm. N. J. 166.

1683, July 26, 35. Car. 2. An order of council for iſſuing a quo warranto againſt the charter of the colony of the Maſſachuſett's bay in New-England; with his majeſty's declaration that in caſe the ſaid corporation of Maſſachuſett's bay ſhall before proſecution had upon the ſame quo warranto make a full ſubmiſſion and entire reſignation to his royal pleaſure, he will then regulate their charter in ſuch a manner as ſhall be for his ſervice and the good of that colony. Title in American library. 139. 6.

1683, Sept. 28. 35. Car. 2. A commiſſion to Lord Howard of Effingham to be lieutenant and governor-general of Virginia. M. S.

The

Digitized by Google

The humble addrefs of the chief governor, council and repreſentatives of the iſland of Nevis, in the Weſt-Indies, preſented to his majeſty by Colonel Netheway and captain Jefferſon, at Windſor, May 3. 1684. Title in Amer. libr. 142. 3. cites Lond. Gaz. No. 1927. 1684, May 3.

A treaty with the Indians at Albany. 1684. Aug. 2.

A treaty of neutrality for America between France and England. 7. Corps Dipl. part 2. p. 44. 2. Mem. Am. 40. 1686, Nov. 16.

By the king, a proclamation for the more effectual reducing and ſuppreſſing of pirates and privateers in America, as well on the ſea as on the land in great numbers, committing frequent robberies and piracies, which hath occaſioned a great prejudice and obſtruction to trade and commerce, and given a great ſcandal and diſturbance to our government in thoſe parts. Title Amer. libr. 147. 2. cites Lond. Gaz. No 2315. 1687. Jan. 20.

Conſtitution

Digitized by Google

1687, Feb. 12. Conſtitution of the council of proprietors of Weſt Jerſey. Smith's N. Jerſey. 199.

1687, qu. Sept. 27. 4. Jac. 2. A confirmation of the grant of the northern neck of Virginia to Lord Culpeper.

1687, Sept. 5. Governor Coxe's declaration to the council of proprietors of Weſt-Jerſey. Sm. N. J. 190.

1687, Dec. 16. Proviſional treaty of Whitehall concerning America between France and England. 2. Mem. de l'Am. 89.

1687. Governor Coxe's narrative relating to the diviſion line, directed to the council of proprietors of Weſt-Jerſey. Sm. App. N. 4.

1687. The repreſentation of the council of proprietors of Weſt-Jerſey to Governor Burnet. Smith. App. No. 5.

The remonſtrance and petition of the inhabitants of Eaſt-New-Jerſey to the king. Sm. App. No. 8.

The memorial of the proprietors of Eaſt-New-Jerſey to the Lords of trade. Sm. App. No. 9.

1688, Sept. 5. Agreement of the line of partition between Eaſt and Weſt-New-

Digitized by Google

New-Jerſey. Sm. N. J. 196.

Conveyance of the government of Weſt-Jerſey and territories by Dr. Coxe, to the Weſt-Jerſey ſociety. 1691.

A charter Granted by king William and Queen Mary to the inhabitants of the province of Maſſachuſett's bay in New-England. 2. Mem. de l'Am. 593. 1691, Oct. 7.

The frame of the government of the Province of Pennſylvania and the territories thereunto belonging, paſſed by governor Markham. Nov. 7, 1696. 1696, Nov. 7.

The treaty of peace between France and England, made at Ryſwick. 7. Corps Dipl. part 2. p. 339. 2. Mem. Am. 89. 1697, Sept. 20.

The opinion and anſwer of the Lords of trade to the memorial of the proprietors of Eaſt-New-Jerſey. Sm. App. No. 10. 1699, July 5.

The memorials of the proprietors of Eaſt-New-Jerſey to the Lords of trade. Sm. App. No. 11. 1700, Jan. 15.

The petition of the proprietors of Eaſt and Weſt-New-Jerſey to the Lords juſtices of England. Sm. App. No. 12.

Digitized by Google

1700. W. 3. A confirmation of the boundary between the colonies of New-York and Connecticut, by the crown.

1701, Aug. 12. The memorial of the proprietors of East and West-Jersey to the king. Sm. App. No. 14.

1701, Oct. 2. Representation of the Lords of trade to the Lords justices. Sm. App. No. 13.

1701. A treaty with the Indians.

1701-2, Jan. 6. Report of Lords of trade to king William of draughts of a commission and instructions for a governor of New-Jersey. Sm. N. J. 262.

1702, Apr. 15. Surrender from the proprietors of E. and W. N. Jersey of their pretended right of government to her majesty Q. Anne. Sm. N. J. 211.

1702, Apr. 17. The Queen's acceptance of the surrender of government of East and West-Jersey. Sm. N. J. 219.

1702, Nov. 16. Instructions to Lord Cornbury. Sm. N. J. 230.

1702, Dec. 5. A commission from Queen Anne to Lord Cornbury, to be captain-general and governor in chief of New-Jersey. Sm. N. J. 220.

Recognition

Digitized by Google

Recognition by the council of proprietors of the true boundary of the deeds of Sept. 10, and Oct. 10, 1677. (New-Jerſey.) Sm. N. J. 96. 1703, June 27.

Indian deed for the lands above the falls of the Delaware in Weſt-Jerſey. 1703.

Indian deed for the lands at the head of Rankokus River in Weſt-Jerſey.

A proclamation by Queen Anne for ſettling and aſcertaining the current rates of foreign coins in America. Sm. N. J. 281. 1704, June 18.

Additional inſtructions to Lord Cornbury. Sm. N. J. 235. 1705, May 3.

Additional inſtructions to Lord Cornbury. Sm. N. J. 258. 1707, May 3.

Additional inſtructions to Lord Cornbury. Sm. N. J. 259. 1707. Nov. 20.

An anſwer by the council of proprietors for the weſtern diviſion of New-Jerſey, to queſtions, propoſed to them by Lord Cornbury. Sm. N. J. 285. 1707.

Inſtructions to Colonel Vetch in his negociations with the governors of America. Sm. N. J. 364. 1708-9, Feb. 28.

Inſtructions to the governor of 1708-9, Feb. 28.

New-

Digitized by Google

New-Jersey and New-York. Sm. J. 361.

1710, Aug. Earl of Dartmouth's letter to governor Hunter.

1711, Apr. 22. Premieres propositions de la France. 6. Lamberty, 669. 2. Mem. Am. 341.

1711, Oct. 8. Réponses de la France aux demandes préliminaries de la Grande-Bretagne. 6. Lamb. 681. 2. Mem. Amr. 344.

Sept. 27. 1711, Oct. 8. Demandes préliminaries plus particulieres de la Grande-Bretagne, avec les réponses. 2. Mem. de l'Am. 346.

Sept. 27. 1711, Oct. 8. L'acceptation de la part de la Grande-Bretagne. 2. Mem. Am. 356.

1711, Dec. 23. The Queen's instructions to the Bishop of Bristol and Earl of Stafford, her plenipotentiaries, to treat of a general peace. 6. Lamberty, 744. 2. Mem. Am. 358.

May 24. 1712, June 10. A memorial of Mr. St. John to the Marquis de Torci, with regard to North America, to commerce, and to the suspension of arms. 7. Recueil de Lamberty 161, 2. Mem. de l'Amer. 376.

1712, June 10. Réponse du roi de France au memoire

Digitized by Google

moire de Londres. 7. Lamberty, p. 163. 2. Mem. Am. 380.

Traité pour une ſuſpenſion d'armes entre Louis XIV. roi de France, & Anne, reigne de la Grande-Bretagne, fait à Paris. 8. Corps Diplom. part. 1. p. 308. 2. Mem. d'Am. 104. 1712, Aug. 13.

Offers of France to England, demands of England, and the anſwers of France. 7. Rec. de Lamb. 491. 2. Mem. Am. 390. 1712, Sept. 12.

Traité de paix & d'amitié entre Louis XIV. roi de France & Anne, reine de la Grande-Bretagne, fait à Utrecht. 15. Corps Diplomatique de Dumont, 339. id. Latin. 2 actes & memoires de la pais d'Utrecht. 457. id. Lat. Fr. 2. Mem. Am. 113. Mar. 31. 1713, April 11.

Traité de navigation & de commerce entre Lous XIV. roi de France, & Anne, reine de la Grande-Bretagne. Fait à Utrecht. 8. Corps. Dipl. part. 1. p. 345. 2. Mem. de l'Am. 137. Mar. 31. 1713, April 11.

A treaty with Indians. 1726.

The petition of the repreſentatives of the province of New Jerſey, to have a diſtinct governor. Sm. N. J. 421. 1721, Jan.

Deed of releaſe by the government 1723,

Digitized by Google

of Connecticut to that of New-York.

1732, June 9-20. 5. Ch. 2. The charter Granted by George II. for Georgia. 4. Mem. de l'Am. 617.

1733. Petition of Lord Fairfax, that a commiſſion might iſſue for running and marking the dividing line between his diſtrict and the province of Virginia.

1733, Nov. 29. Order of the king in council for commiſſioners to ſurvey and ſettle the ſaid dividing line between the proprietary and royal territory.

1726, Aug. 5. Report of the Lords of trade relating to the ſeparating the government of the province of New-Jerſey from New-York. Sm. N. J. 423.

1737, Aug. 10. Survey and report of the commiſſioners appointed on the part of the crown to ſettle the line between the crown and Lord Fairfax.

1737, Aug. 11. Survey and report of the commiſſioners appointed on the part of Lord Fairfax to ſettle the line between the crown and him.

1738, Dec. 22. Order of reference of the ſurveys between

Digitized by Google

between the crown and Lord Fairfax to the council for plantation affairs.

Treaty with the Indians of the 6 nations at Lancaſter. 1744, June.

Report of the council for plantation affairs, fixing the head ſprings of Rappahanoc and Patowmac, and a commiſſion to extend the line. 1745, Apr. 6.

Order of the king in council confirming the ſaid report of the council for plantation affairs. 1745, Apr. 11.

Articles préliminaires pour parvenir à la paix, ſignés a Aix-la-Chapelle entre les miniſtres de France, de la Grande-Bretagne, & des Provinces-Unies des Pays-Bas. 2. Mem. de l'Am. 159. 1748, Apr. 30.

Declaration des miniſtres de France, de la Grande-Bretagne, & des Provinces-Unies des Pays-Bas, pour rectifier les articles I. & II. des preliminaires. 2. Mem. Am. 165. 1748, May 21.

The general and definitive treaty of peace concluded at Aix-la-Chapelle. Lon. Mag. 1748. 503. French. 2. Mem. Am. 169. 1748, Oct. 7-18. 22. G. 2.

Digitized by Google

1754. A treaty with the Indians.

1758, Aug. 7. A conference between governor Bernard and Indian nations at Burlington. Sm. N. J. 449.

1758, Oct. 8. A conference between governor Denny, governor Bernard and others, and Indian nations at Eaſton. Sm. N. J. 455.

1758, July 25. 33. G. 2. The capitulation of Niagara.

175— The king's proclamation promiſing lands to ſoldiers.

1763, Feb. 10. 3. G. 3. The definitive treaty concluded at Paris. Lo. Mag. 1763. 149.

1763, Oct. 7. G. 3. A proclamation for regulating the ceſſions made by the laſt treaty of peace. Guth. Geogr. Gram. 623.

1763. The king's proclamation againſt ſettling on any lands on the waters, weſtward of the Alleghany.

1768, Nov. 3. Deed from the ſix nations of Indians to William Trent and others for lands Betwixt the Ohio and Monongahela. View of the title to Indiana. Phil. Steiner and Ciſt. 1776.

1768, Nov. 5. Deed from the ſix nations of Indians to the crown for certain lands and ſettling a boundary. M. S.

APPENDIX.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

No. I.

THE preceding ſheets having been ſubmitted to my friend Mr. Charles Thompſon, ſecretary of Congreſs, he has furniſhed me with the following obſervations, which have too much merit not to be communicated.

(1.) p. 21. Beſides the three channels of communication mentioned between the weſtern waters and the Atlantic, there are two others, to which the Pennſylvanians are turning their attention; one from Preſque-iſle, on Lake Erie, to Le Bœuf, down the Alleghaney to Kiſkiminitas, then up the Kiſkiminitas, and from thence, by a ſmall portage, to Juniata, which falls into the Suſquehanna: the other from Lake Ontario to the Eaſt Branch of the Delaware, and down that to Philadelphia. Both theſe are ſaid to be very practicable: and, conſidering the enterpriſing temper of the Pennſylvanians, and particularly the merchants of Philadelphia, whoſe object is concentered in promoting the commerce and trade of one city, it is not improbable but one or both of theſe communications will be opened and improved.

(2.) p. 24. The reflections I was led into on viewing this paſſage of the Patowmac through the Blue ridge were, that this country muſt have ſuffered ſome violent convulſion, and that the face of it muſt have been changed from what it probably was ſome centuries ago: that the broken and ragged faces of the mountain on each ſide of the river; the tremendous rocks, which are left with one end fixed in the precipice, and the other jutting out, and ſeemingly ready to fall for want of ſupport; the bed of the river for ſeveral miles below obſtructed, and filled with the looſe ſtones carried from this mound; in ſhort, every thing on which you caſt your

Digitized by Google

eye evidently demonſtrates a diſrupture and breach in the mountain, and that, before this happened, what is now a fruitful vale, was formerly a great lake or collection of water, which poſſibly might have here formed a mighty caſcade, or had its vent to the ocean by the Suſquehanna, where the Blue ridge ſeems to terminate. Beſides this, there are other parts of this country which bear evident traces of a like convulſion. From the beſt accounts I have been able to obtain, the place where the Delaware now flows through the Kittatinny mountain, which is a continuation of what is called the North ridge, or mountain, was not its original courſe, but that it paſſed through what is now called 'the Wind-gap,' a place ſeveral miles to the weſtward, and above an hundred feet higher than the preſent bed of the river. This Wind-gap is about a mile broad, and the ſtones in it ſuch as ſeem to have been waſhed for ages by water running over them. Should this have been the caſe, there muſt have been a large lake behind that mountain, and by ſome uncommon ſwell in the waters, or by ſome convulſion of nature the river muſt have opened its way through a different part of the mountain, and meeting there with leſs obſtruction, carried away with it the oppoſing mounds of earth and deluged the country below with the immenſe collection of waters to which this new paſſage gave vent. There are ſtill remaining, and daily diſcovered, innumerable inſtances of ſuch a deluge on both ſides of the river, after it paſſed the hills above the falls of Trenton, and reached the champaign. On the New-Jerſey ſide, which is flatter than the Pennſylvania ſide, all the country below Croſwick hills ſeems to have been overflowed to the diſtance of from ten to fifteen miles back from the river, and to have acquired a new ſoil by the earth and clay brought down and mixed with the native ſand. The ſpot on which Philadelphia ſtands evidently appears to be made ground. The different ſtrata through which they paſs in digging to water, the acorns, leaves, and ſometimes branches, which are found about twenty feet below the ſurface, all ſeem to demonſtrate this. I am informed that at York-town in Virginia, in the bank of the river, there are different ſtrata of ſhells and earth, one

Digitized by Google

above another, which ſeem to point out that the country there has undergone ſeveral changes; that the ſea has, for a ſucceſſion of ages, occupied the place where dry land now appears: and that the ground has been ſuddenly raiſed at various periods. What a change would it make in the country below, ſhould the mountains at Niagara, by any accident, be cleft aſunder, and a paſſage ſuddenly opened to drain off the waters of Erie and the upper lakes! While ruminating on theſe ſubjects, I have often been hurried away by fancy, and led to imagine, that what is now the bay of Mexico, was once a champaign country; and that from the point or cape of Florida, there was a continued range of mountains through Cuba, Hiſpaniola, Porto rico, Martinique, Gaudaloupe, Barbadoes, and Trinidad, till it reached the coaſt of America, and formed the ſhores which bounded the ocean, and guarded the country behind; that, by ſome convulſion or ſhock of nature, the ſea had broken through theſe mounds, and deluged that vaſt plain, till it reached the foot of the Andes; that being there heaped up by the trade-winds, always blowing from one quarter, it had found its way back, as it continues to do, through the gulph between Florida and Cuba, carrying with it the loam and ſand it may have ſcooped from the country it had occupied, part of which it may have depoſited on the ſhores of North-America, and with part formed the banks of Newfoundland.—But theſe are only the viſions of fancy.

(3.) p. 49. There is a plant, or weed, called the James-town weed*, of a very ſingular quality. The late Dr. Bond informed me, that he had under his care a patient, a young girl, who had put the ſeeds of this plant into her eye, which dilated the pupil to ſuch a degree, that ſhe could ſee in the dark, but in the light was almoſt blind. The effect that the leaves had when eaten by a ſhip's crew that arrived at James-town, are well known†.

* Datura pericarpiis erectis ovatis. Linn.

† An inſtance of temporay imbecility produced by them is mentioned, Beverl. H. of Virg. b. 2. c. 4.

Digitized by Google

(4.) p. 93. Monſ. Buffon has indeed given an afflicting picture of human nature in his deſcription of the man of America. But ſure I am there never was a picture more unlike the original. He grants indeed that his ſtature is the ſame as that of the man of Europe. He might have admitted, that the Iroquois were larger, and the Lenopi, or Delawares, taller than the people in Europe generally are. But he ſays their organs of generation are ſmaller and weaker than thoſe of the Europeans. Is this a fact? I believe not; at leaſt it is an obſervation I never heard before. 'They have no beard.' Had he known the pains and trouble it coſt the men to pluck out by the roots the hair that grows on their faces, he would have ſeen that nature had not been deficient in that reſpect. Every nation has its cuſtoms. I have ſeen an Indian beaux, with a looking-glaſs in his hand, examining his face for hours together, and plucking out by the roots every hair he could diſcover, with a kind of tweezers made of a piece of fine braſs wire, that had been twiſted round a ſtick, and which he uſed with great dexterity.—'They have no ardor for their females.' It is true, they do not indulge thoſe exceſſes, nor diſcover that fondneſs which is cuſtomary in Europe; but this is not owing to a defect in nature but to manners. Their ſoul is wholly bent upon war. This is what procures them glory among the men, and makes them the admiration of the women. To this they are educated from their earlieſt youth. When they purſue game with ardor, when they bear the fatigues of the chaſe, when they ſuſtain and ſuffer patiently hunger and cold; it is not ſo much for the ſake of the game they purſue, as to convince their parents and the council of the nation that they are fit to be enrolled in the number of the warriors. The ſongs of the women, the dance of the warriors, the ſage counſel of the chiefs, the tales of the old, the triumphal entry of the warriors returning with ſucceſs from battle, and the reſpect paid to thoſe who diſtinguiſh themſelves in war and in ſubduing their enemies; in ſhort every thing they ſee or hear tends to inſpire them with an ardent deſire for military fame. If a young man were to diſcover a fondneſs for women before he

Digitized by Google

had been to war, he would become the contempt of the men and the ſcorn and ridicule of the women. Or were he to indulge himſelf with a captive taken in war, and much more were he to offer violence in order to gratify his luſt, he would incur indelible diſgrace. The ſeeming frigidity of the men, therefore, is the effect of manners, and not a defect of nature. Beſides, a celebrated warrior is oftener courted by the females, than he has occaſion to court: and this is a point of honor which the men aim at. Inſtances ſimilar to that of Ruth and Boaz* are not uncommon among them. For though the women are modeſt and diffident, and ſo baſhful that they ſeldom lift up their eyes, and ſcarce ever look a man full in the face, yet, being brought up in great ſubjection, cuſtom and manners reconcile them to modes of acting, which, judged of by Europeans, would be deemed inconſiſtent with the rules of female decorum and propriety. I once ſaw a young widow, whoſe huſband, a warrior, had died about eight days before, haſtening to finiſh her grief, and who by tearing her hair, beating her breaſt, and drinking ſpirits, made the tears flow in great abundance, in order that ſhe might grieve much in a ſhort ſpace of time, and be married that evening to another young warrior. The manner in which this was viewed by the men and women of the tribe, who ſtood round, ſilent and ſolemn ſpectators of the ſcene, and the indifference with which they anſwered my queſtion reſpecting it, convinced me that it was no unuſual cuſtom. I have known men advanced in years, whoſe wives were old and paſt child-bearing, take young wives, and have children, though the practice of polygamy is not common. Does this favor of frigidity, or want of ardor for the female? Neither do they ſeem to be deficient in natural affection. I have ſeen both fathers and mothers in the deepeſt affliction, when their children have been dangerouſly ill; though I believe the affection is ſtronger in the deſcending than the aſcending ſcale, and though cuſtom for-

* When Boaz had eaten and drank, and his heart was merry, he went to lie down at the end of the heap of corn: and Ruth came ſoftly, and uncovered his feet, and laid her down. Ruth iii. 7.

Digitized by Google

bids a father to grieve immoderately for a ſon ſlain in battle.—'That they are timorous and cowardly,' is a character with which there is little reaſon to charge them, when we recollect the manner in which the Iroquois met Monſ. ———, who marched into their country; in which the old men, who ſcorned to fly, or to ſurvive the capture of their town, braved death, like the old Romans in the time of the Gauls, and in which they ſoon after revenged themſelves by ſacking and deſtroying Montreal. But above all the unſhaken fortitude with which they bear the moſt excruciating tortures and death when taken priſoners, ought to exempt them from that character. Much leſs are they to be characteriſed as a people of no vivacity, and who are excited to action or motion only by the calls of hunger and thirſt. Their dances in which they ſo much delight, and which to an European would be the moſt ſevere exerciſe, fully contradict this, not to mention the fatiguing marches, and the toil they voluntarily and cheerfully undergo in their military expeditions. It is true, that when at home, they do not employ themſelves in labor or the culture of the ſoil: but this again is the effect of cuſtoms and manners, which have aſſigned that to the province of the women. But it is ſaid, they are averſe to ſociety and a ſocial life. Can any thing be more inapplicable than this to a people who always live in towns or clans? Or can they be ſaid to have no 'republic,' who conduct all their affairs in national councils, who pride themſelves in their national character, who conſider an inſult or injury done to an individual by a ſtranger as done to the whole, and reſent it accordingly? In ſhort this picture is not applicable to any nation of Indians I have ever known or heard of in North-America.

(5.) p. 142. As far as I have been able to learn, the country from the ſea coaſt, to the Alleghaney, and from the moſt ſouthern waters of James River up to Patuxen River, now in the ſtate of Maryland, was occupied by three different nations of Indians, each of which ſpoke a different language, and were under ſeparate and diſtinct governments. What the original or real names

Digitized by Google

of thoſe nations were, I have not been able to learn with certainty: but by us they are diſtinguiſhed by the names of Powhatans, Manahoacs, and Monacans, now commonly called Tuſcaroras. The Powhatans, who occupied the country from the ſea ſhore up to the falls of the rivers, were a powerful nation, and ſeem to have conſiſted of ſeven tribes, five on the weſtern and two on the eaſtern ſhore. Each of theſe tribes was ſubdivided into towns, families, or clans, who lived together. All the nations of Indians in North-America lived in the hunter ſtate and depended for ſubſiſtence on hunting, fiſhing, and the ſpontaneous fruits of the earth, and a kind of grain which was planted and gathered by the women, and is now known by the name of Indian corn. Long potatoes, pumpkins of various kinds, and ſquaſhes, were alſo found in uſe among them. They had no flocks, herds, or tamed animals of any kind. Their government is a kind of patriarchal confederacy. Every town or family has a chief, who is diſtinguiſhed by a particular title, and whom we commonly call 'Sachem.' The ſeveral towns or families that compoſe a tribe, have a chief who preſides over it, and the ſeveral tribes compoſing a nation have a chief who preſides over the whole nation. Theſe chiefs are generally men advanced in years, and diſtinguiſhed by their prudence and abilities in council. The matters which merely regard a town or family are ſettled by the chief and principal men of the town: thoſe which regard a tribe, ſuch as the appointment of head warriors or captains, and ſettling differences between different towns and families, are regulated at a meeting or council of the chiefs from the ſeveral towns; and thoſe which regard the whole nation, ſuch as the making war, concluding peace, or forming alliances with the neighboring nations, are deliberated on and determined in a national council compoſed of the chiefs of the tribe, attended by the head warriors and a number of the chiefs from the towns who are his counſellors. In every town there is a council houſe, where the chief and old men of the town aſſemble, when occaſion requires, and conſult what is proper to be done. Every tribe has a fixed place for the chiefs of the towns to meet and conſult on the buſineſs of the tribe: and in

Digitized by Google

every nation there is what they call the central council house, or central council fire, where the chiefs of the several tribes, with the principal warriors, convene to consult and determine on their national affairs. When any matter is proposed in the national council, it is common for the chiefs of the several tribes to consult thereon apart with their counsellors, and when they have agreed, to deliver the opinion of the tribe at the national council: and, as their government seems to rest wholly on persuasion, they endeavor, by mutual concessions, to obtain unanimity. Such is the government that still subsists among the Indian nations bordering on the United States. Some historians seem to think, that the dignity of office of Sachem was hereditary. But that opinion does not appear to be well founded. The Sachem or chief of the tribe seems to be by election.—And sometimes persons who are strangers, and adopted into the tribe, are promoted to this dignity on account of their abilities.—Thus on the arrival of captain Smith, the first founder of the colony of Virgina, Opechàcanough, who was Sachem or chief of the Chickahóminies, one of the tribes of the Powhàtans is said to have been of another tribe, and even of another nation, so that no certain account could be obtained of his origin or descent. The chiefs of the nation seem to have been by a rotation among the tribes. Thus when capt. Smith, in the year 1609, questioned Powhàtan (who was the chief of the nation, and whose proper name is said to have been Wohunsonacock) respecting the succession, the old chief informed him, 'that he was very old and had seen the death of all his people 'thrice*; that not one of these generations were then living except

* This is one generation more than the poet ascribes to the life of Nestor.

To d' ede duo men geneai meropon anthropon
Ephthiath vi vi prosthen ama traphen ed' egneonto
En pulo egathee, meta de tritatoisin anassen.

1 Hom. Il. 250.

Two generations now had past away,
Wise by his rules, and happy by his sway;
Two ages o'er his native realm he reign'd,
And now the example of the third remain'd. Pope.

Digitized by Google

'himſelf; that he muſt ſoon die and the ſucceſſion deſcend in order 'to his brother Opichapàn, Opechàncanough, and Catatàugh, and 'then to his two ſiſters, and their two daughters.' But theſe were Appellations deſignating the tribes in the confederacy. For the perſons named are not his real brothers, but the chiefs of different tribes. Accordingly in 1618, when Powhatan died, he was ſucceeded by Opichapàn, and after his deceaſe Opechàncanough became chief of the nation. I need only mention another inſtance to ſhew that the chiefs of the tribes claimed this kindred with the head of the nation. In 1622, when Raleigh Craſhaw was with Japazàw, the Sachem or chief of the Patowmacs, Opechàncanough, who had great power and influence, being the ſecond man in the nation, and next in ſucceſſion to Opichapàn, and who was a bitter but ſecret enemy to the Engliſh, and wanted to engage his nation in a war with them, ſent two baſkets of beads to the Patowmac chief, and deſired him to kill the Engliſhman that was with him. Japazàw replied, that the Engliſh were his friends, and Opichapàn his *brother*, and that therefore there ſhould be no blood ſhed between them by his means. It is alſo to be obſerved, that when the Engliſh firſt came over, in all their conferences with any of the chiefs, they conſtantly heard him make mention of his *brother*, with whom he muſt conſult, or to whom he referred them, meaning thereby either the chief of the nation, or the tribes in confederacy. The Manahòacs are ſaid to have been a confederacy of four tribes, and in alliance with the Monacans, in the war which they were carrying on againſt the Powhatans.

To the northward of theſe there was another powerful nation, which occupied the country from the Cheſapeak-bay up to the Kittatinney mountain, and as far eaſtward as Connecticut river, comprehending that part of New-York which lies between the Highlands and the ocean, all the ſtate of New-Jerſey, that part of Pennſylvania which is watered, below the range of the Kittatinney mountains, by the rivers or ſtreams falling into the Delaware, and the county of Newcaſtle in the ſtate of Delaware, as far as Duck creek.

Digitized by Google

It is to be obſerved, that the nations of Indians diſtinguiſhed their countries one from another by natural boundaries, ſuch as ranges of mountains or ſtreams of water. But as the heads of rivers frequently interlock, or approach near to each other, as thoſe who live upon a ſtream claim the country watered by it, they often encroached on each other, and this is a conſtant ſource of war between the different nations. The nation occupying the tract of country laſt deſcribed, called themſelves Lenopi. The French writers call them Loups; and among the Engliſh they are now commonly called Delawares. This nation or confederacy conſiſted of five tribes, who all ſpoke one language. 1. The Chihohocki, who dwelt on the weſt ſide of the river now called Delaware, a name which it took from Lord De la War, who put into it on his paſſage from Virginia in the year , but which by the Indians was called Chihohocki. 2. The Wanami, who inhabited the country called New-Jerſey, from the Rariton to the ſea. 3. The Munſey who dwelt on the upper ſtreams of the Delaware, from the Kittatinney mountains down to the Lehigh or weſtern branch of the Delaware. 4. The Wabinga, who are ſometimes called River Indians, ſometimes Mohickanders, and who had their dwellings between the weſt branch of Delaware and Hudſon's River, from the Kittatinney ridge down to the Rariton: and 5. The Mahiccon, or Mahattan, who occupied Staten iſland, York iſland, (which from its being the principal ſeat of their reſidence was formerly called Mahatton) Long iſland and that part of New-York and Connecticut which lies between Hudſon and Connecticut rivers, from the highland, which is a continuation of the Kittatinney ridge down to the ſound. This nation had a cloſe alliance with the Shawaneſe, who lived on the Suſquehanna and to the weſtward of that river, as far as the Alleghaney mountains, and carried on a long war with another powerful nation or confederacy of Indians, which lived to the north of them between the Kittatinney mountains or highlands, and the lake Ontario, and who call themſelves Mingos, and are called by the French writers Iroquois, by the Engliſh the Five Nations, and by the Indians to the

Digitized by Google

ſouthward, with whom they were at war, Maſſawomacs. This war was carrying on in its greateſt fury, when captain Smith firſt arrived in Virginia. The Mingo warriors had penetrated down to the Suſquehanna to the mouth of it. In one of his excurſions up the bay, at the mouth of Suſquehanna, in 1608, captain Smith met with ſix or ſeven of their canoes full of warriors, who were coming to attack their enemies in the rear. In an excurſion which he had made a few weeks before, up the Rappahannock, and in which he had a ſkirmiſh with a party of the Manahoacs, and taken a brother of one of their chiefs priſoner, he firſt heard of this nation. For when he aſked the priſoner, why his nation attacked the Engliſh? the priſoner ſaid, becauſe his nation had heard that the Engliſh came from under the world to take their world from them. Being aſked how many worlds he knew? he ſaid, he knew but one, which was under the ſky that covered him, and which conſiſted of the Powhatans, the Manakins, and the Maſſawomacs. Being queſtioned concerning the latter, he ſaid they dwelt on a great water to the north, that they had many boats, and ſo many men that they waged with all the reſt of the world. The Mingo confederacy then conſiſted of five tribes; three who are the elder, to wit, the Senecas, who live to the weſt, the Mohawks to the eaſt, and the Onondagas between them; and two who are called the younger tribes, namely, the Cayugas and Oneidas. All theſe tribes ſpeak one language, and were then united in a cloſe confederacy, and occupied the tract of country from the eaſt end of lake Erie to lake Champlain, and from the Kittatinney and Highlands to the lake Ontario, and the river Cadaraqui, or St. Laurence. They had, ſometime before that, carried on a war with a nation, who lived beyond the lakes, and were called Adirondacs. In this war they were worſted: but having made a peace with them, through the interceſſion of the French, who were then ſettling in Canada, they turned their arms againſt the Lenopi; and as this war was long and doubtful, they, in the courſe of it, not only exerted their whole force, but put in practice every meaſure which prudence or policy

Digitized by Google

could deviſe to bring it to a ſucceſsful iſſue. For this purpoſe they bent their courſe down the Suſquehanna, warring with the Indians in their way, and having penetrated as far as the mouth of it, they, by the terror of their arms, engaged a nation, now known by the name of Nanticocks, Conoys, and Tùteloes, who lived between Cheſapeak and Delaware bays, and bordering on the tribe of Chihohocki, to enter into an alliance with them. They alſo formed an alliance with the Monacans, and ſtimulated them to a war with the Lenopi and their confederates. At the ſame time the Mohawks carried on a furious war down the Hudſon againſt the Mohiccons and River Indians, and compelled them to purchaſe a temporary and precarious peace, by acknowledging them to be their ſuperiors, and paying an annual tribute. The Lenopi being ſurrounded with enemies, and hard preſſed, and having loſt many of their warriors, were at laſt compelled to ſue for peace, which was granted to them on the condition that they ſhould put themſelves under the protection of the Mingos, confine themſelves to raiſing corn, hunting for the ſubſiſtence of their families, and no longer have the power of making war. This is what the Indians call making them women. And in this condition the Lenopis were when William Penn firſt arrived and began the ſettlement of Pennſylvania in 1682.

(6.) p. 153. From the figurative language of the Indians, as well as from the practice of thoſe we are ſtill acquainted with, it is evident that it was, and ſtill continues to be, a conſtant cuſtom among the Indians to gather up the bones of the dead, and depoſit them in a particular place.—Thus, when they make peace with any nation, with whom they have been at war, after burying the hatchet, they take up the belt of wampum, and ſay, 'We now gather 'up all the bones of thoſe who have been ſlain, and bury them, &c.' See all the treaties of peace. Beſides, it is cuſtomary when any of them die at a diſtance from home, to bury them, and afterwards to come and take up the bones and carry them home. At a treaty which was held at Lancaſter with the ſix nations one of them died, and was buried in the woods a little diſtance from the town.

Digitized by Google

Some time after a party came and took up the body, ſeparated the fleſh from the bones by boiling and ſcraping them clean, and carried them to be depoſited in the ſepulchres of their anceſtors. The operation was ſo offenſive and diſagreeable, that nobody could come near them while they were performing it.

(7.) p. 155. The Oſwegàtchies, Connoſedàgos and Cohunnegàgoes, or, as they are commonly called, Caghnewàgos, are of the Mingo or Six nation Indians, who, by the influence of the French miſſionaries, have been ſeparated from their nation, and induced to ſettle there.

I do not know of what nation the Augquàgahs are; but ſuſpect they are a family of the Senecas.

The Nanticocks and Conòies were formerly of a nation that lived at the head of Cheſapeak-bay, and who, of late years have been adopted into the Mingo or Iroquois confederacy, and make a ſeventh nation. The Monacans or Tuſcaroras, who were taken into the confederacy in 1712, making the Sixth.

The Saponies are families of the Wanamies, who removed from New-Jerſey, and, with the Mohiccons, Munſies, and Delawares, belong to the Lenopi nation. The Mingos are a war colony from the ſix nations; ſo are the Cohunnewagos.

Of the reſt of the northern tribes I never have been able to learn any thing certain. But all accounts ſeem to agree in this, that there is a very powerful nation, diſtinguiſhed by a variety of names taken from the ſeveral towns or families, but commonly called Tawas or Outawas, who ſpeak one language, and live round and on the waters that fall into the weſtern lakes, and extend from the waters of the Ohio quite to the waters falling into Hudſon's bay.

Digitized by Google

No. II.

In the Summer of the Year 1783, *it was expected, that the* ASSEMBLY OF VIRGINIA *would call a* CONVENTION *for the Eſtabliſhment of a* CONSTITUTION. *The following* DRAUGHT *of a* FUNDAMENTAL CONSTITUTION *for the* COMMONWEALTH OF VIRGINIA *was then prepared, with a deſign of being propoſed in ſuch Convention had it taken place.*

TO the citizens of the commonwealth of Virginia, and all others whom it may concern, the delegates for the ſaid commonwealth in convention aſſembled, ſend greeting.

It is known to you, and to the world, that the government of Great-Britain, with which the American States were not long ſince connected, aſſumed over them an authority unwarrantable and oppreſſive; that they endeavored to enforce this authority by arms, and that the ſtates of New-Hampſhire, Maſſachuſetts, Rhode-Iſland, Connecticut, New-York, New-Jerſey, Pennſylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North-Carolina, South-Carolina, and Georgia, conſidering reſiſtance, with all its train of horrors, as a leſſer evil than abject ſubmiſſion, cloſed in the appeal to arms. It hath pleaſed the Sovereign Diſpoſer of all human events to give to this appeal an iſſue favorable to the rights of the ſtates; to enable them to reject for ever all dependence on a government which had ſhewn itſelf ſo capable of abuſing the truſts repoſed in it; and to obtain from that government a ſolemn and explicit acknowledgment that they are free, ſovereign, and independent ſtates. During the progreſs of that war, through which we had to labor for the eſtabliſh-

Digitized by Google

ment of our rights, the legiſlature of the commonwealth of Virginia found it neceſſary to make a temporary organization of government for preventing anarchy, and pointing our efforts to the two important objects of war againſt our invaders, and peace and happineſs among ourſelves. But this, like all other acts of legiſlation, being ſubject to change by ſubſequent legiſlatures, poſſeſſing equal power with themſelves, it has been thought expedient, that it ſhould receive thoſe amendments which time and trial have ſuggeſted, and be rendered permanent by a power ſuperior to that of the ordinary legiſlature. The general aſſembly therefore of this ſtate recommend it to the good people thereof, to chooſe delegates to meet in general convention, with powers to form a conſtitution of government for them, and to declare thoſe fundamentals to which all our laws preſent and future ſhall be ſubordinate: and, in compliance with this recommendation, they have thought proper to make choice of us, and to veſt us with powers for this purpoſe.

We therefore, the delegates, choſen by the ſaid good people of this ſtate for the purpoſe aforeſaid, and now aſſembled in general convention, do, in execution of the authority with which we are inveſted, eſtabliſh the following conſtitution and fundamentals of government for the ſaid ſtate of Virginia.

The ſaid ſtate ſhall for ever hereafter be governed as a commonwealth.

The powers of government ſhall be divided into three diſtinct departments, each of them to be confided to a ſeparate body of magiſtracy; to wit, thoſe which are legiſlative to one, thoſe which are judiciary to another, and thoſe which are executive to another. No perſon, or collection of perſons, being of one of theſe departments, ſhall exerciſe any power properly belonging to either of the others, except in the inſtances herein after expreſsly permitted.

The legiſlature ſhall conſiſt of two branches, the one to be called the houſe of delegates, the other the ſenate, and both together the general aſſembly. The concurrence of both theſe, expreſſed on three ſeveral readings, ſhall be neceſſary to the paſſage of a law.

Digitized by Google

Delegates for the general aſſembly ſhall be choſen on the laſt Monday of November in every year. But if an election cannot be concluded on that day, it may be adjourned from day to day till it can be concluded.

The number of delegates which each county may ſend ſhall be in proportion to the number of its qualified electors; and the whole number of delegates for the ſtate ſhall be ſo proportioned to the whole number of qualified electors in it, that they ſhall never exceed 300, nor be fewer than 100. Whenever ſuch exceſs or deficiency ſhall take place, the houſe of delegates ſo deficient or exceſſive ſhall, notwithſtanding this, continue in being during its legal term: but they ſhall, during that term, readjuſt the proportion, ſo as to bring their number within the limits before mentioned at the enſuing election. If any county be reduced in its qualified electors below the number authoriſed to ſend one delegate, let it be annexed to ſome adjoining county.

For the election of ſenators, let the ſeveral counties be allotted by the ſenate, from time to time, into ſuch and ſo many diſtricts as they ſhall find beſt; and let each county at the time of electing its delegates, chooſe ſenatorial electors, qualified as themſelves are, and four in number for each delegate their county is entitled to ſend, who ſhall convene, and conduct themſelves, in ſuch manner as the legiſlature ſhall direct, with the ſenatorial electors from the other counties of their diſtrict, and then chooſe, by ballot, one ſenator for every ſix delegates which their diſtrict is entitled to chooſe. Let the ſenatorial diſtricts be divided into two claſſes, and let the members elected for one of them be diſſolved at the firſt enſuing general election of delegates, the other at the next, and ſo on alternately for ever.

All free male citizens, of full age, and ſane mind, who for one year before ſhall have been reſident in the county, or ſhall through the whole of that time have poſſeſſed therein real property of the value of or ſhall for the ſame time have been enrolled in the militia, and no others, ſhall have a right to vote for delegates for the ſaid county, and for ſenatorial electors for the diſtrict. They ſhall give their votes perſonally and *viva voce*.

Digitized by Google

The general assembly shall meet at the place to which the last adjournment was, on the 42d day after the day of the election of delegates, and thenceforward at any other time or place on their own adjournment, till their office expires, which shall be on the day preceding that appointed for the meeting of the next general assembly. But if they shall at any time adjourn for more than one year, it shall be as if they had adjourned for one year precisely. Neither house, without the concurrence of the other, shall adjourn for more than one week, nor to any other place than the one at which they are sitting. The governor shall also have power, with the advice of the council of state, to call them at any other time to the same place, or to a different one, if that shall have become since the last adjournment, dangerous from an enemy, or from infection.

A majority of either house shall be a quorum, and shall be requisite for doing business; but any smaller proportion which from time to time shall be thought expedient by the respective houses, shall be sufficient to call for, and to punish their nonattending members, and to adjourn themselves for any time not exceeding one week.

The members, during their attendance on the general assembly, and for so long a time before and after as shall be necessary for travelling to and from the same, shall be privileged from all personal restraint and assault, and shall have no other privilege whatsoever. They shall receive during the same time, daily wages in gold or silver, equal to the value of two bushels of wheat. This value shall be deemed one dollar by the bushel till the year 1790, in which, and in every tenth year thereafter, the general court, at their first sessions in the year, shall cause a special jury, of the most respectable merchants and farmers, to be summoned, to declare what shall have been the average value of wheat during the last ten years; which averaged value shall be the measure of wages for the ten subsequent years.

Of this general assembly, the treasurer, attorney general, register, ministers of the gospel, officers of the regular armies of this state, or

Digitized by Google

of the United States, perſons receiving ſalaries or emoluments from any power foreign to our confederacy, thoſe who are not reſident in the county for which they are choſen delegates, or diſtricts for which they are choſen ſenators, thoſe who are not qualified as electors, perſons who ſhall have committed treaſon, felony, or ſuch other crimes as would ſubject them to infamous puniſhment, or who ſhall have been convicted by due courſe of law of bribery or corruption, in endeavouring to procure an election to the ſaid aſſembly, ſhall be incapable of being members. All others, not herein elſewhere excluded, who may elect, ſhall be capable of being elected thereto.

Any member of the ſaid aſſembly accepting any office of profit under this ſtate, or the United States, or any of them, ſhall thereby vacate his ſeat, but ſhall be capable of being reelected.

Vacancies occaſioned by ſuch diſqualifications, by death, or otherwiſe, ſhall be ſupplied by the electors, on a writ from the ſpeaker of the reſpective houſe.

The general aſſembly ſhall not have power to infringe this conſtitution; to abridge the civil rights of any perſon on account of his religious belief; to reſtrain him from profeſſing and ſupporting that belief, or to compel him to contributions, other than thoſe he ſhall have perſonally ſtipulated for the ſupport of that or any other; to ordain death for any crime but treaſon or murder, or military offences; to pardon, or give a power of pardoning perſons duly convicted of treaſon or felony, but inſtead thereof they may ſubſtitute one or two new trials, and no more; to paſs laws for puniſhing actions done before the exiſtence of ſuch laws; to paſs any bill of attainder of treaſon or felony; to preſcribe torture in any caſe whatever; nor to permit the introduction of any more ſlaves to reſide in this ſtate, or the continuance of ſlavery beyond the generation which ſhall be living on the thirty firſt day of December, one thouſand eight hundred: all perſons born after that day being hereby declared free.

The general aſſembly ſhall have power to ſever from this ſtate all or any parts of its territory weſtward of the Ohio, or of the meri-

Digitized by Google

ſan of the mouth of the Great Kanhaway, and to cede to congreſs one hundred ſquare miles of territory in any other part of this ſtate, exempted from the juriſdiction and government of this ſtate ſo long as congreſs ſhall hold their ſeſſions therein, or in any territory adjacent thereto, which may be ceded to them by any other ſtate.

They ſhall have power to appoint the ſpeakers of their reſpective houſes, treaſurer, auditors, attorney general, regiſter, all general officers of the military, their own clerks and ſerjeants, and no other officers, except where, in other parts of this conſtitution, ſuch appointment is expreſsly given them.

The executive powers ſhall be exerciſed by a *Governor*, who ſhall be choſen by joint ballot of both houſes of aſſembly, and when choſen ſhall remain in office five years, and be ineligible a ſecond time. During his term he ſhall hold no other office or emolument under this ſtate, or any other ſtate or power whatſoever. By executive powers, we mean no reference to thoſe powers exerciſed under our former government by the crown as of its prerogative, nor that theſe ſhall be the ſtandard of what may or may not be deemed the rightful powers of the governor. We give him thoſe powers only, which are neceſſary to execute the laws (and adminiſter the government) and which are not in their nature either legiſlative or judiciary. The application of this idea muſt be left to reaſon. We do however expreſsly deny him the prerogative powers of erecting courts, offices, boroughs, corporations, fairs, markets, ports, beacons, light-houſes, and ſea-marks; of laying embargoes, of eſtabliſhing precedence, of retaining within the ſtate, or recalling to it any citizen thereof, and of making denizens, except ſo far as he may be authoriſed from time to time by the legiſlature to exerciſe any of theſe powers. The powers of declaring war and concluding peace, of contracting alliances, of iſſuing letters of marque and repriſal, of raiſing and introducing armed forces, of building armed veſſels, forts, or ſtrong holds, of coining money or regulating its value, of regulating weights and meaſures, we leave to be exerciſed under the authority of the confederation: but in all caſes reſpecting them which

Digitized by Google

are out of the said confederation, they shall be exercised by the governor, under the regulation of such laws as the legislature may think it expedient to pass.

The whole military of this state, whether regular, or of militia, shall be subject to his directions; but he shall leave the execution of those directions to the general officers appointed by the legislature.

His salary shall be fixed by the legislature at the session of the assembly in which he shall be appointed, and before such appointment be made; or if it be not then fixed, it shall be the same which his next predecessor in office was entitled to. In either case he may demand it quarterly out of any money which shall be in the public treasury; and it shall not be in the power of the legislature to give him less or more, either during his continuance in office, or after he shall have gone out of it. The lands, houses, and other things appropriated to the use of the governor, shall remain to his use during his continuance in office.

A *Council of State* shall be chosen by joint ballot of both houses of the assembly, who shall hold their offices seven years, and be ineligible a second time, and who, while they shall be of the said council, shall hold no other office or emolument under this state, or any other state or power whatsoever. Their duty shall be to attend and advise the governor when called on by him, and their advice in any case shall be a sanction to him. They shall also have power, and it shall be their duty, to meet at their own will, and to give their advice, though not required by the governor, in cases where they shall think the public good calls for it. Their advice and proceedings shall be entered in books to be kept for that purpose, and shall be signed as approved or disapproved by the members present.—These books shall be laid before either house of assembly when called for by them. The said council shall consist of eight members for the present; but their numbers may be increased or reduced by the legislature, whenever they shall think it necessary: provided such reduction be made only as the appointments become vacant by

Digitized by Google

death, resignation, disqualification, or regular deprivation. A majority of their actual number, and not fewer, shall be a quorum.—They shall be allowed for the present each by the year, payable quarterly out of any money which shall be in the public treasury. Their salary however may be increased or abated from time to time, at the discretion of the legislature; provided such increase or abatement shall not, by any ways or means, be made to affect either then, or at any future time, any one of those then actually in office. At the end of each quarter their salary shall be divided into equal portions, by the number of days on which, during that quarter, a council has been held, or required by the governor, or by their own adjournment, and one of those portions shall be withheld from each member for every of the said days which, without cause allowed good by the board, he failed to attend, or departed before adjournment without their leave. If no board should have been held during that quarter, there shall be no deduction.

They shall annually choose a *President*, who shall preside in council in the absence of the governor, and who, in case of his office becoming vacant by death or otherwise, shall have authority to exercise all his functions, till a new appointment be made, as he shall also in any interval during which the governor shall declare himself unable to attend to the duties of his office.

The *Judiary* powers shall be exercised by county courts and such other inferior courts as the legislature shall think proper to continue or to erect, by three superior courts, to wit, a court of admiralty, a general court of common law, and a high court of chancery, and by one supreme court, to be called the court of appeals.

The judges of the high court of chancery, general court, and court of admiralty, shall be four in number, each to be appointed by joint ballot of both houses of assembly, and to hold their offices during good behaviour. While they continue judges, they shall hold no other office or emolument, under this state, or any other state or power whatsoever, except that they may be delegated to congress, receiving no additional allowance.

Digitized by Google

These judges, assembled together shall constitute the court of appeals, whose business shall be to receive and determine appeals from the three superior courts but to receive no original causes, except in the cases expressly permitted herein.

A majority of the members of either of these courts and not fewer, shall be a quorum. But in the court of appeals nine members shall be necessary to do business. Any smaller numbers however may be authorised by the legislature to adjourn their respective courts.

They shall be allowed for the present each by the year, payable quarterly out of any money which shall be in the public treasury. Their salaries however may be increased or abated, from time to time, at the discretion of the legislature, provided such increase or abatement shall not, by any ways or means, be made to affect, either then, or at any future time, any one of those then actually in office. At the end of each quarter their salary shall be divided into equal portions by the number of days on which, during that quarter, their respective courts sat, or should have sat, and one of these portions shall be withheld from each member for every of the said days, which, without cause allowed good by his court, he failed to attend, or departed before adjournment without their leave. If no court should have been held during the quarter, there shall be no deduction.

There shall moreover be a *Court of Impeachments* to consist of three members of the council of state, one of each of the superior courts of chancery, common law, and admiralty, two members of the house of delegates and one of the senate, to be chosen by the body respectively of which they are. Before this court any member of the three branches of government, that is to say, the governor, any member of the council, of the two houses of legislature, or of the superior courts, may be impeached by the governor, the council, or either of the said houses or courts, and by no other, for such misbehaviour in office as would be sufficient to remove him therefrom : and the only sentence they shall have authority to pass

Digitized by Google

ſhall be that of deprivation and future incapacity of office. Seven members ſhall be requiſite to make a court, and two thirds of thoſe preſent muſt concur in the ſentence. The offences cognizable by this court ſhall be cognizable by no other, and they ſhall be triers of the fact as well as judges of the law.

The juſtices or judges of the inferior courts already erected, or hereafter to be erected, ſhall be appointed by the governor, on advice of the council of ſtate, and ſhall hold their offices during good behaviour, or the exiſtence of their court. For breach of the good behaviour, they ſhall be tried according to the laws of the land, before the court of appeals, who ſhall be judges of the fact as well as of the law. The only ſentence they ſhall have authority to paſs, ſhall be that of deprivation and future incapacity of office, and two thirds of the members preſent muſt concur in this ſentence.

All courts ſhall appoint their own clerks, who ſhall hold their offices during good behaviour, or the exiſtence of their court: they ſhall alſo appoint all other their attending officers to continue during their pleaſure. Clerks appointed by the ſupreme or the ſuperior courts ſhall be removeable by their reſpective courts. Thoſe to be appointed by other courts ſhall have been previouſly examined, and certified to be duly qualified, by ſome two members of the general court, and ſhall be removeable for breach of the good behaviour by the court of appeals only, who ſhall be judges of the fact as well as of the law. Two thirds of the members preſent muſt concur in the ſentence.

The juſtices or judges of the inferior courts may be members of the legiſlature.

The judgment of no inferior court ſhall be final in any civil caſe, of greater value than 50 buſhels of wheat, as laſt rated in the general court for ſettling the allowance to the members of the general aſſembly, nor in any caſe of treaſon, felony, or other crime which ſhould ſubject the party to infamous puniſhment.

In all caſes depending before any court, other than thoſe of impeachments, of appeals, and military courts, facts put in iſſue ſhall

Digitized by Google

be tried by jury, and in all courts whatever witneſſes ſhall give teſtimony viva voce in open court, wherever their attendance can be procured: and all parties ſhall be allowed counſel and compulſory proceſs for their witneſſes.

Fines, amercements, and terms of impriſonment left indefinite by the law, other than for contempts, ſhall be fixed by the jury, triers of the offence.

The governor, two councillors of ſtate, and a judge from each of the ſuperior courts of chancery, common law, and admiralty, ſhall be a council to reviſe all bills which ſhall have paſſed both houſes of aſſembly, in which council the governor, when preſent, ſhall preſide. Every bill before it becomes a law, ſhall be preſented to this council, who ſhall have a right to adviſe its rejection, returning the bill, with their advice and reaſons in writing, to the houſe in which it originated, who ſhall proceed to reconſider the ſaid bill. But if after ſuch reconſideration, two thirds of the houſe ſhall be of opinion the bill ſhould paſs finally, they ſhall paſs and ſend it, with the advice and written reaſons of the ſaid council of reviſion to the other houſe, wherein, if two thirds alſo ſhall be of opinion it ſhould paſs finally, it ſhall thereupon become law: otherwiſe it ſhall not.

If any bill, preſented to the ſaid council, be not, within one week (excluſive of the day of preſenting it) returned by them, with their advice of rejection and reaſons, to the houſe wherein it originated, or to the clerk of the ſaid houſe, in caſe of its adjournment over the expiration of the week, it ſhall be law from the expiration of the week, and ſhall then be demandable by the clerk of the houſe of delegates, to be filed of record in his office.

The bills which they approve ſhall become law from the time of ſuch approbation, and ſhall then be returned to, or demandable by, the clerk of the houſe of delegates, to be filed of record in his office.

A bill rejected on advice of the council of reviſion, may again be propoſed, during the ſame ſeſſion of aſſembly, with ſuch alterations as will render it comformable to their advice.

The members of the ſaid council of reviſion ſhall be appointed

Digitized by Google

from time to time by the board or court of which they reſpectively are. Two of the executive and two of the judiciary members ſhall be requiſite to do buſineſs: and to prevent the evils of non-attendance, the board and courts may, at any time name all, or ſo many as they will, of their members, in the particular order in which they would chooſe the duty of attendance to devolve from preceding to ſubſequent members, the preceding failing to attend. They ſhall have additionally for their ſervices in this council the ſame allowance as members of aſſembly have.

The confederation is made a part of this conſtitution, ſubject to ſuch future alterations as ſhall be agreed to by the legiſlature of this ſtate, and by all the other confederating ſtates.

The delegates to congreſs ſhall be five in number; any three of whom, and no fewer, may be a repreſentation. They ſhall be appointed by joint ballot of both houſes of aſſembly for any term not exceeding one year, ſubject to be recalled, within the term by joint vote of both the ſaid houſes. They may at the ſame time be members of the legiſlative or judiciary departments, but not of the executive.

The benefits of the writ of Habeas Corpus ſhall be extended, by the legiſlature, to every perſon within this ſtate, and without fee, and ſhall be ſo facilitated that no perſon may be detained in priſon more than ten days after he ſhall have demanded and been refuſed ſuch writ by the judge appointed by law, or if none be appointed, then by any judge of a ſuperior court, nor more than ten days after ſuch a writ ſhall have been ſerved on the perſon detaining him, and no order given, on due examination, for his remandment or diſcharge.

The military ſhall be ſubordinate to the civil power.

Printing-preſſes ſhall be ſubject to no other reſtraint than lableneſs to legal proſecution for falſe facts printed and publiſhed.

Any two of the three branches of government concurring in opinion, each by the voices of two thirds of their whole exiſting number, that a convention is neceſſary for altering this conſtitution, or correcting breaches of it, they ſhall be authoriſed to iſſue writs to

Digitized by Google

every county for the election of ſo many delegates as they are authoriſed to ſend to the general aſſembly, which elections ſhall be held, and writs returned, as the laws ſhall have provided in the caſe of elections of delegates to aſſembly, mutatis, mutandis, and the ſaid delegates ſhall meet at the uſual place of holding aſſemblies, three months after date of ſuch writs, and ſhall be acknowledged to have equal powers with this preſent convention. The ſaid writs ſhall be ſigned by all the members approving the ſame.

To *introduce this government*, the following ſpecial and temporary proviſion is made.

This convention being authoriſed only to amend thoſe laws which conſtituted the form of government, no general diſſolution of the whole ſyſtem of laws can be ſuppoſed to have taken place: but all laws in force at the meeting of this convention, and not inconſiſtent with this conſtitution, remain in full force, ſubject to alterations by the ordinary legiſlature.

The preſent general aſſembly ſhall continue till the 42d day after the laſt Monday of November in this preſent year. On the ſaid laſt Monday of November in this preſent year, the ſeveral counties ſhall by their electors, qualified as provided by this conſtitution, elect delegates, which for the preſent ſhall be, in number, one for every militia of the ſaid county, according to the lateſt returns in poſſeſſion of the governor, and ſhall alſo chooſe ſenatorial electors in proportion thereto, which ſenatorial electors ſhall meet on the 14th day after the day of their election, at the court-houſe of that county of their preſent diſtrict, which would ſtand firſt in an alphabetical arrangement of their counties, and ſhall chooſe ſenators in the proportion fixed by this conſtitution. The elections and returns ſhall be conducted, in all circumſtances not hereby particularly preſcribed, by the ſame perſons and under the ſame forms, as preſcribed by the preſent laws in elections of ſenators and delegates of aſſembly. The ſaid ſenators and delegates ſhall conſtitute the firſt general aſſembly of the new government, and ſhall ſpecially apply themſelves to the procuring an exact return from every coun-

Digitized by Google

ty of the number of its qualified electors, and to the settlement of the number of delegates to be elected for the ensuing general assembly.

The present governor shall continue in office to the end of the term for which he was elected.

All other officers of every kind shall continue in office as they would have done had their appointment been under this constitution, and new ones, where new are hereby called for, shall be appointed by the authority to which such appointment is referred.—One of the present judges of the general court, he consenting thereto, shall by joint ballot of both houses of assembly, at their first meeting, be transferred to the high court of chancery.

Digitized by Google

No. III.

An ACT *for eſtabliſhing* RELIGIOUS FREEDOM, *paſſed in the Aſſembly of Virginia, in the beginning of the year* 1786.

WELL aware that Almighty God hath created the mind free; that all attempts to influence it by temporal puniſhments or burdens, or by civil incapacitations, tend only to beget habits of hypocriſy and meanneſs, and are a departure from the plan of the Holy Author of our religion, who being Lord both of body and mind, yet choſe not to propagate it by coercions on either, as was in his Almighty power to do; that the impious preſumption of legiſlators and rulers, civil as well as eccleſiaſtical, who, being themſelves but fallible and uninſpired men have aſſumed dominion over the faith of others, ſetting up their own opinions and modes of thinking as the only true and infallible, and as ſuch endeavouring to impoſe them on others, hath eſtabliſhed and maintained falſe religions over the greateſt part of the world, and through all time; that to compel a man to furniſh contributions of money for the propagation of opinions which he diſbelieves, is ſinful and tyrannical; that even the forcing him to ſupport this or that teacher of his own religious perſuaſion, is depriving him of the comfortable liberty of giving his contributions to the particular paſtor whoſe morals he would make his pattern, and whoſe powers he feels moſt perſuaſive to righteouſneſs, and is withdrawing from the miniſtry thoſe temporal rewards, which proceeding from an approbation of their perſonal conduct are an additional incitement to earneſt and unremitting labors for the inſtruction of mankind; that our civil

Digitized by Google

rights have no dependence on our religious opinions, more than our opinions, in physics or geometry; that therefore the proscribing any citizen as unworthy the public confidence by laying upon him an incapacity of being called to offices of trust and emolument, unless he profess or renounce this or that religious opinion, is depriving him injuriously of those privileges and advantages to which in common with his fellow citizens he has a natural right; that it tends also to corrupt the principles of that very religion it is meant to encourage, by bribing, with a monopoly of worldly honours and emoluments, those who will externally profess and conform to it; that though indeed these are criminal who do not withstand such temptation, yet neither are those innocent who lay the bait in their way; that to suffer the civil magistrate to intrude his powers into the field of opinion and to restrain the profession or propagation of principles, on supposition of their ill tendency, is a dangerous fallacy, which at once destroys all religious liberty, because he being of course judge of that tendency, will make his opinions the rule of judgment, and approve or condemn the sentiments of others only as they shall square with or differ from his own; that it is time enough for the rightful purposes of civil government, for its officers to interfere when principles break out into overt acts against peace and good order; and finally, that truth is great and will prevail if left to herself, that she is the proper and sufficient antagonist to error, and has nothing to fear from the conflict, unless by human interposition disarmed of her natural weapons, free argument and debate, errors ceasing to be dangerous when it is permitted freely to contradict them.

Be it therefore enacted by the General Assembly, That no man shall be compelled to frequent or support any religious worship, place or ministry whatsoever, nor shall be enforced, restrained, molested, or burthened in his body or goods, nor shall otherwise suffer on account of his religious opinions or belief; but that all men shall be free to profess, and by argument to maintain, their opinions in matters of religion, and that the same shall in no wise diminish, enlarge, or affect their civil capacities.

Digitized by Google

And though we well know that this assembly, elected by the people for the ordinary purposes of legislation only, have no power to restrain the acts of succeeding assemblies, constituted with powers equal to our own, and that therefore to declare this act irrevocable, would be of no effect in law, yet we are free to declare, and do declare, that the rights hereby asserted are of the natural rights of mankind, and that if any act shall be hereafter passed to repeal the present or narrow its operation, such act will be an infringement of natural right.

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX,

RELATIVE

TO THE

MURDER OF LOGAN's FAMILY.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A LETTER TO GOVERNOR HENRY, OF MARYLAND.

Philadelphia, December 31ſt, 1797.

DEAR SIR,

MR. Tazewell has communicated to me the enquiries you have been ſo kind as to make, relative to a paſſage in the Notes on Virgina, which has lately excited ſome newſpaper publications. I feel, with great ſenſibility, the intereſt you take in this buſineſs, and with pleaſure, go into explanations with one whoſe objects I know to be truth and juſtice alone. Had Mr. Martin thought proper to ſuggeſt to me, that doubts might be entertained of the tranſaction reſpecting Logan, as ſtated in the Notes on Virginia, and to enquire on what grounds that ſtatement was founded, I ſhould have felt myſelf obliged by the enquiry, have informed him candidly of the grounds, and cordially have co-operated in every means of inveſtigating the fact, and correcting whatſoever in it ſhould be found to have been erroneous. But he choſe to ſtep at once into the newſpapers, and in his publications there and the letters he wrote to me, adapted a ſtyle which forbade the reſpect of an anſwer. Senſible, however, that no act of his could abſolve me from the juſtice due to others, as ſoon as I found that the ſtory of Logan could be doubted, I determined to enquire into it as accurately as the teſtimony remaining, after a lapſe of twenty odd years, would permit, and that the reſult ſhould be made known, either in the firſt new edition which ſhould be printed of the Notes on Virginia, or by publiſhing an appendix. I thought that ſo far as that work had contributed to impeach the memory of Creſap, by handing on an erroneous charge, it was proper it ſhould be made the vehicle of retribution. Not that I was at all the author of the injury. I had only concurred, with thouſands and thouſands of others, in believing a tranſaction on authority which merited reſpect.

Digitized by Google

For the ſtory of Logan is only repeated in the Notes on Virginia, preciſely as it had been current for more than a dozen years before they were publiſhed. When Lord Dunmore returned from the expedition againſt the Indians, in 1774, he and his officers brought the ſpeech of Logan, and related the circumſtances connected with it. Theſe were ſo affecting, and the ſpeech itſelf is ſo fine a morſel of eloquence, that it became the theme of every converſation, in Williamſburgh particularly, and generally, indeed, whereſoever any of the officers reſided or reſorted. I learned it in Williamſburgh; I believe at Lord Dunmore's; and I find in my pocket-book of that year (1774) an entry of the narrative, as taken from the mouth of ſome perſon, whoſe name, however, is not noted, nor recollected, preciſely in the words ſtated in the Notes on Virginia. The ſpeech was publiſhed in the Virginia Gazette of that time (I have it myſelf in the volume of gazettes of that year) and though in a ſtyle by no means elegant, yet it was ſo admired, that it flew through all the public papers of the continent, and through the magazines and other periodical publications of Great-Britain; and thoſe who were boys at that day will now atteſt, that the ſpeech of Logan uſed to be given them as a ſchool exerciſe for repetition. It was not till about thirteen or fourteen years after the newſpaper publications, that the Notes on Virginia were publiſhed in America. Combating, in theſe, the contumelious theory of certain European writers, whoſe celebrity gave currency and weight to their opinions, that our country, from the combined effects of ſoil and climate, degenerated animal nature, in the general, and particularly the moral faculties of man, I conſidered the ſpeech of Logan as an apt proof of the contrary, and uſed it as ſuch; and I copied, verbatim, the narrative I had taken down in 1774, and the ſpeech as it had been given us in a better tranſlation by lord Dunmore. I knew nothing of the Creſaps, and could not poſſibly have a motive to do them an injury with deſign. I repeated what thouſands had done before, on as good authority as we have for moſt of the facts we learn through

Digitized by Google

life, and ſuch as, to this moment, I have ſeen no reaſon to doubt.—That any body queſtioned it, was never ſuſpected by me, till I ſaw the letter of Mr. Martin in the Baltimore paper. I endeavored then to recollect who among my cotemporaries, of the ſame circle of ſociety, and conſequently of the ſame recollections, might ſtill be alive. Three and twenty years of death and diſperſion had left very few. I remembered, however, that general Gibſon was ſtill living, and knew that he had been the tranſlator of the ſpeech. I wrote to him immediately. He, in anſwer declares to me, that he was the very perſon ſent by lord Dunmore to the Indian town; that after he had delivered his meſſage there, Logan took him out to a neighboring wood; ſat down with him, and rehearſing, with tears, the cataſtrophe of his family, gave him that ſpeech for lord Dunmore; that he carried it to lord Dunmore; tranſlated it for him; has turned to it in the Encyclopedia, as taken from the Notes on Virginia, and finds that it was his tranſlation I had uſed, with only two or three verbal variations of no importance. Theſe, I ſuppoſe had ariſen in the courſe of ſucceſſive copies. I cite general Gibſon's letter by memory, not having it with me; but I am ſure I cite it ſubſtantially right. It eſtabliſhes unqueſtionably, that the ſpeech of Logan is genuine; and that being eſtabliſhed, it is Logan himſelf who is author of all the important facts. "Colonel Creſap," ſays he, "in cold blood and unprovoked murdered "all the relations of Logan, not ſparing even my women and chil"dren. There runs not a drop of my blood in the veins of any liv"ing creature." The perſon and the fact, in all its material circumſtances are here given by Logan himſelf. General Gibſon, indeed, ſays, that the title was miſtaken; that Creſap was a captain, and not a colonel. This was Logan's miſtake. He alſo obſerves, that it was on the Ohio, and not on the Kanhaway itſelf, that his family was killed. This is an error which has crept into the traditionary account; but ſurely of little moment in the moral view of the ſubject. The material queſtion is; was Logan's family murdered, and by whom? That it was murdered has not, I believe,

Digitized by Google

been denied; that it was by one of the Creſaps, Logan affirms.—This is a queſtion which concerns the memories of Logan and Creſap; to the iſſue of which I am as indifferent as if I had never heard the name of either. I have begun and ſhall continue to enquire into the evidence additional to Logan's, on which the fact was founded. Little, indeed, can now be heard of, and that little diſperſed and diſtant. If it ſhall appear on enquiry, that Logan has been wrong in charging Creſap with the murder of his family, I will do juſtice to the memory of Creſap as far as I have contributed to the injury, by believing and repeating what others had believed and repeated before me. If, on the other hand, I find that Logan was right in his charge, I will vindicate, as far as my ſuffrage may go, the truth of a chief, whoſe talents and misfortunes have attached to him the reſpect and commiſeration of the world.

I have gone, my dear Sir, into this lengthy detail to ſatisfy a mind, in the candor and rectitude of which I have the higheſt confidence. So far as you may incline to uſe the communication for rectifying the judgments of thoſe who are willing to ſee things truly as they are, you are free to uſe it. But I pray that no confidence which you may repoſe in any one, may induce you to let it go out of your hands ſo as to get into a newſpaper. Againſt a conteſt in that field I am entirely decided. I feel extraordinary gratification, indeed, in addreſſing this letter to you, with whom ſhades of difference in political ſentiments have not prevented the interchange of good opinion, nor cut off the friendly offices of ſociety and good correſpondence. This political toleranee is the more valued by me, who conſider ſocial harmony as the firſt of human felicities, and the happieſt moments thoſe which are given to the effuſions of the heart. Accept them ſincerely, I pray you, from one who has the honor to be, with ſentiments of high reſpect and attachment,

Dear ſir,

Your moſt obedient

And moſt humble ſervant,

THOMAS JEFFERSON.

Digitized by Google

THE Notes on Virginia were written in Virginia, in the years 1781 and 1782, in answer to certain queries proposed to me by Mons. de Marbois, then secretary of the French legation in the United States: and a manuscript copy was delivered to him. A few copies, with some additions, were afterwards, in 1784, printed in Paris, and given to particular friends. In speaking of the animals of America, the theory of M. de Buffon, the Abbe Raynal, and others presented itself to consideration. They have supposed that there is something in the soil, climate and other circumstances of America, which occasions animal nature to degenerate, not excepting even the man, native or adoptive, physical or moral. This theory, so unfounded, and degrading to one third of the globe, was called to the bar of fact reason. Among other proofs adduced in contradiction of this hypothesis, the speech of Logan an Indian chief, delivered to lord Dunmore in 1774, was produced, as a specimen of the talents of the aboriginals of this country, and particularly of their eloquence; and it was believed that Europe had never produced any thing superior to this morsel of eloquence. In order to make it intelligible to the reader, the transaction, on which it was founded, was stated, as it had been generally related in America at the time, and as I had heard it myself, in the circle of lord Dunmore, and the officers who accompanied him: and the speech itself was given as it had, ten years before the printing of that book, circulated in the newspapers through all the then colonies, through the magazines of Great-Britain, and periodical publications of Europe. For three and twenty years it passed uncontradicted; nor was it ever suspected that it even admitted contradiction. In 1797 however, for the first time, not only the whole transaction respecting Logan was affirmed in the public papers to be false, but the speech itself suggested to be a forgery, and even a forgery of mine, to aid me in proving that the man of America was equal in body and in mind, to the man of Europe. But wherefore the for-

Digitized by Google

gery? Whether Logan's or mine, it would ſtill have been American. I ſhould indeed conſult my own fame if the ſuggeſtion, that this ſpeech is mine, were ſuffered to be believed. He would have a juſt right to be proud who could with truth claim that compoſition. But it is none of mine; and I yield it to whom it is due.

On ſeeing then that this tranſaction was brought into queſtion, I thought it my duty to make particular enquiry into its foundation. It was the more my duty as it was alleged that, by aſcribing to an individual therein named, a participation in the murder of Logan's family, I had done an injury to his character which it had not deſerved. I had no knowledge perſonally of that individual. I had no reaſon to aim an injury at him. I only repeated what I had heard from others, and what thouſands had heard and believed as well as myſelf; and which no one indeed, till then, had been known to queſtion. Twenty three years had now elapſed, ſince the tranſaction took place. Many of thoſe acquainted with it were dead, and the living diſperſed to very diſtant parts of the earth. Few of them were even known to me. To thoſe however of whom I knew I made application by letter; and ſome others, moved by a regard for truth and juſtice, were kind enough to come forward, of themſelves, with their teſtimony. Theſe fragments of evidence, the ſmall remains of a mighty maſs, which time has conſumed, are here preſented to the public, in the form of letters, certificates, or affidavits, as they came to me. I have rejected none of theſe forms, nor required other ſolemnities from thoſe whoſe motives and characters were pledges of their truth. Hiſtorical tranſactions are deemed to be well vouched by the ſimple declarations of thoſe who have borne a part in them; and eſpecially of perſons having no intereſt to falſify or diſfigure them. The world will now ſee whether they, or I, have injured Creſap, by believing Logan's charge againſt him: and they will decide between Logan and Creſap, whether Creſap was innocent and Logan a calumniator?

In order that the reader may have a clear conception of the

Digitized by Google

tranſactions, to which the different parts of the following declarations refer, he muſt take notice that they eſtabliſh four different murders. 1. Of two Indians, a little above Wheeling. 2. Of others at Grave creek, among whom were ſome of Logan's relations. 3. The maſſacre at Baker's Bottom, on the Ohio oppoſite the mouth of Yellow creek, where were other relations of Logan. 4. Of thoſe killed at the ſame place, coming in their canoes to the relief of their friends. I place the numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, againſt certain paragraphs of the evidence, to indicate the particular murder to which the paragraph relates, and preſent alſo a ſmall ſketch or map of the principle ſcenes of theſe butcheries, for their more ready comprehenſion.

Extract of a letter from the honorable judge INNES *of Frankfort in Kentucky to* THOMAS JEFFERSON *; dated Kentucky, near Frankfort, March 2d, 1799.*

I RECOLLECT to have ſeen Logan's ſpeech in 1775, in one of the public prints. That Logan conceived Creſap to be the author of the murder at Yellow creek, it is in my power to give, perhaps, a more particular information than any other perſon you can apply to.

In 1774 I lived in Fincaſtle county, now divided into Waſhington, Montgomery and part of Wythe. Being intimate with col. Preſton's family, I happened in July to be at his houſe, when an expreſs was ſent to him as the county lieut. requeſting a guard of the militia to be ordered out for the protection of the inhabitants reſiding low down on the north fork of Holſton River. The expreſs brought with him a war club, and a note which was left tied to it at the houſe of one Robertſon, whoſe family were cut off by the Indians, and gave riſe for the application to col. Preſton, of which the following is a copy, then taken by me in my memorandum book:

Digitized by Google

"Captain Cresap,

"What did you kill my people on Yellow creek for? The white "people killed my kin, at Conestoga, a great while ago; and I "thought nothing of that. But you killed my kin again, on "Yellow creek, and took my cousin prisoner. Then I thought I "must kill too; and I have been three times to war since; but "the Indians are not angry: only myself."

Captain JOHN LOGAN.

July 21st, 1774.

With very great respect, I am, Dear Sir,
your most obedient servant,
HARRY INNES.

Alleghany County, ss.
State of Pennsylvania.

Before me the subscriber, a justice of the peace in and for said county, personally appeared John Gibson, esquire, an associate judge of same county, who being duly sworn deposeth and saith that he traded with the Shawnese and other tribes of Indians then settled on the Siota in the year 1773, and in the beginning of the year 1774, and that in the month of April of the same year, he left the same Indian towns, and came to this place, in order to procure some goods and provisions, that he remained here only a few days, and then set out in company with a certain Alexander Blaine and M. Elliot by water to return to the towns on Siota, and that one evening as they were drifting in their canoes near the Long reach on the Ohio, they were hailed by a number of white men on the south west shore, who requested them to put ashore, as they had disagreeable news to inform them of; that we then landed on shore; and found amongst the party, a major Angus M'Donald from West Chester, a Doctor Woods from same place, and a party as they said of 150 men. We then asked the news. They informed us that some of the party who had been taking up, and improving lands near the Big Kanhaway River, had seen another

Digitized by Google

party of white men, who informed them that they and ſome others had fell in with a party of Shawneſe, who had been hunting on the ſouth weſt ſide of the Ohio, that they had killed the whole of the Indian party, and that the others had gone acroſs the country to Cheat River with the horſes and plunder, the conſequence of which they apprehended would be an Indian war, and that they were flying away. On making enquiry of them when this murder ſhould have happened, we found that it muſt have been ſome conſiderable time before we left the Indian towns, and that there was not the ſmalleſt foundation for the report, as there was not a ſingle man of the Shawneſe tribe, but what returned from hunting long before this ſhould have happened.

We then informed them that if they would agree to remain at the place we then were, one of us would go to Hock Hocking River with ſome of their party, where we ſhould find ſome of our people making canoes, and that if we did not find them there, we might conclude that every thing was not right. Doctor Wood and another perſon then propoſed going with me; the reſt of the party ſeemed to agree, but ſaid they would ſend and conſult captain Creſap who was about two miles from that place. They ſent off for him, and during the greateſt part of the night they behaved in the moſt diſorderly manner, threatening to kill us and ſaying the damned traders were worſe than the Indians and ought to be killed. In the morning Captain Michael Creſap came to the camp. I then gave him the information as above related. They then met in council, and after an hour or more captain Creſap returned to me and informed that he could not prevail on them to adopt the propoſal I had made to them, that as he had a great regard for captain R. Callender, a brother in law of mine with whom I was connected in trade, he adviſed me by no means to think of proceeding any further, as he was convinced the preſent party would fall on and kill every Indian they met on the river, that for his part he ſhould not continue with them, but go right acroſs the country to Redſtone to avoid the conſequences. That we then proceeded to

Digitized by Google

Hocking and went up the same to the canoe place, where we found our people at work, and after some days we proceeded to the towns on Siota by land. On our arrival there, we heard of the different murders committed by the party on their way up the Ohio.

This Deponent further saith that in the year 1774, he accompanied lord Dunmore on the expedition against the Shawnese and other Indians on their Siota, that on their arrival within 15 miles of the towns, they were met by a flag, and a white man of the name of Elliot, who informed lord Dunmore that the chiefs of the Shawnese had sent to request his lordship to halt his army and send in some person, who understood their language; that this deponent, at the request of lord Dunmore and the whole of the officers with him, went in; that on his arrival at the towns, Logan, the Indian, came to where this deponent was sitting with the Corn-Stock, and the other chiefs of the Shawnese, and asked him to walk out with him; that they went into a copse of wood, where they sat down, when Logan, after shedding abundance of tears, delivered to him the speech, nearly as related by Mr. Jefferson in his notes on the state of Virginia; that he the deponent told him then that it was not col. Cresap who had murdered his relations, and that although his son captain Michael Cresap was with the party who killed a Shawnese chief and other Indians, yet he was not present when his relations were killed at Bakers, near the mouth of Yellow creek on the Ohio: that this deponent on his return to camp delivered the speech to lord Dunmore; and that the murders perpetrated as above were considered as ultimately the cause of the war of 1774, commonly called Cresap's war.

Sworn and subscribed the 4th April, 1800, at Pittsburgh, before me, } JOHN GIBSON.

JER. PARKER.

Digitized by Google

Extract of a letter from col. EBENEZER ZANE, *to the honorable* JOHN BROWN, *one of the ſenators in Congreſs from Kentucky; dated Wheeling, Feb. 4th,* 1800.

I was myſelf, with many others, in the practice of making improvements on lands upon the Ohio, for the purpoſe of acquiring rights to the ſame. Being on the Ohio at the mouth of Sandy creek, in company with many others, news circulated that the Indians had robbed ſome of the land jobbers. This news induced the people generally to aſcend the Ohio. I was among the number.

1 On our arrival at the Wheeling, being informed that there were two Indians with ſome traders near and above Wheeling, a propoſition was made by the then captain Michael Creſap to way lay and kill the Indians upon the river. This meaſure I oppoſed with much violence, alleging that the killing of thoſe Indians might involve the country in a war. But the oppoſite party prevailed and proceeded up the Ohio with captain Creſap at their head.

In a ſhort time the party returned, and alſo the traders, in a canoe; but there were no Indians in the company. I enquired what had become of the Indians, and was informed by the traders and Creſap's party that they had fallen overboard. I examined the canoe, and ſaw much freſh blood and ſome bullet holes in the canoe. This fully convinced me that the party had killed the two Indians, and thrown them into the river.

2 On the afternoon of the day this action happened, a report prevailed that there was a camp, or party of Indians on the Ohio below and near the Wheeling. In conſequence of this information, captain Creſap with his party, joined by a number of recruits, proceeded immediately down the Ohio for the purpoſe, as was then generally underſtood, of deſtroying the Indians above mentioned. On the ſucceeding day, captain Creſap and his party returned to Wheeling, and it was generally reported by the party that they had killed a number of Indians. Of the truth of this report I had no doubt, as one of Creſap's party was badly wounded, and the party had a freſh ſcalp, and a quantity of property,

Digitized by Google

which they called Indian plunder. At the time of the laſt mentioned tranſaction, it was generally reported that the party of Indians down the Ohio were Logan and his family; but I have reaſon to believe that this report was unfounded.

3 Within a few days after the tranſaction above mentioned, a party of Indians were killed at Yellow creek. But I muſt do the memory of captain Creſap the juſtice to ſay that I do not believe that he was preſent at the killing of the Indians at Yellow creek. But there is not the leaſt doubt in my mind, that the maſſacre at Yellow creek was brought on by the two tranſactions firſt ſtated.

All the tranſactions which I have related happened in the latter end of April 1774: and there can ſcarcely be a doubt that they were the cauſe of the war which immediately followed, commonly called Dunmore's war.

I am with much eſteem, yours, &c.

EBENEZER ZANE.

The certificate of WILLIAM HUSTON of Waſhington county, in the ſtate of Pennſylvania, communicated by DAVID RIDDICK, Eſquire, prothonotary of Waſhington county, Pennſylvania; who in the letter incloſing it ſays "Mr. WILLIAM HUSTON is a man of eſtabliſhed reputation in point of integrity."

I William Huſton of Waſhington county, in the ſtate of Pennſylvania, do hereby certify to whom it may concern, that in the year 1774 I reſided at Catfiſhes camp, on the main path from Wheeling to Redſtone: that Michael Creſap, who reſided on or near the Patowmack River, on his way up from the river Ohio, at the head of a party of armed men, lay ſome time at my cabin,

2 I had previouſly heard the report of Mr. Creſap having killed ſome Indians, ſaid to be the relations of "Logan" an Indian Chief. In a variety of converſation with ſeveral of Creſap's party, they boaſted of the deed; and that in the preſence of their chief. They acknowledged they had fired firſt on the Indians. They had with them one man on a litter, who was in the ſkirmiſh.

Digitized by Google

I do further certify that, from what I learned from the party themſelves, I then formed the opinion, and have not had any reaſon to change the opinion ſince, that the killing, on the part of the whites, was what I deemed the groſſeſt murder. I further certify that ſome of the party, who afterwards killed ſome women and other Indians at Baker's Bottom, alſo lay at my cabin, on their march to the interior parts of the country; they had with them a little girl, whoſe life had been ſpared by the interference of ſome more humane than the reſt. If neceſſary I will make affidavit to the above to be true. Certified at Waſhington, this 18th day of April, Anno Domini, 1798.

WILLIAM HUSTON.

The certificate of JACOB NEWLAND, *of Shelby county, Kentucky, communicated by the honorable judge Innes, of Kentucky.*

In the year 1774, I lived on the waters of Short creek, a branch of the Ohio, 12 miles above Wheeling. Some time in June or July of that year, capt. Michael Creſap raiſed a party of men, and came out under col. M'Daniel, of Hampſhire county, Virginia, who commanded a detachment againſt the Wappotommaka towns on the Muſkinghum. I met with captain Creſap, at Redſtone fort, and entered his company. Being very well acquainted with him, we converſed freely; and he among other converſations, informed me several times of falling in with ſome Indians on the Ohio ſome diſtance below the mouth of Yellow creek, and killed two or three of them; and that this murder was before that of the Indians by Greathouſe and others, at Yellow creek. I do not recollect the reaſon which captain Creſap aſſigned for committing the act, but never underſtood that the Indians gave any offence. Certified under my hand this 25th day of November, 1799, being an inhabitant of Shelby county, and State of Kentucky.

JACOB NEWLAND.

Digitized by Google

The certificate of JOHN ANDERSON, a merchant in Fredericksburg, Virginia; communicated by Mann Page, Esq. of Mansfield, near Fredericksburg, who, in the latter accompanying it, says, "Mr. John Anderson has for many years past been settled in Fredericksburg, in the mercantile line. I have known him in prosperous and adverse situations. He has always shown the greatest degree of equanimity, his honesty and veracity are unimpeachable. These things can be attested by all the respectable part of the town, and neighborhood of Fredericksburg."

Mr. John Anderson, a merchant in Fredericksburgh, says, that in the year 1774, being a trader in the Indian country, he was at Pittsburgh, to which place he had a cargo brought up the river in a boat navigated by a Delaware Indian and a white man. That on 1 their return down the river, with a cargo, belonging to Messrs. Butler, Michael Cresap fired on the boat, and killed the Indian, after which two men of the name of Gatewood and others of the 3 name of *Tumblestone, who lived on the opposite side of the river from the Indians, with whom they were on the most friendly terms, invited a party of them to come over and drink with them; and that, when the Indians were drunk, they murdered them to the 4 number of six, among whom was Logan's mother. That five other Indians uneasy at the absence of their friends, came over the river to enquire after them; when they were fired upon, and two were killed, and the others wounded. This was the origin of the war.

I certify the above to be true to the best of my recollection.

JOHN ANDERSON.

Attest.

DAVID BLAIR, 30th June, 1798.

* The popular pronunciation of Tomlinson, which was the real name.

Digitized by Google

The depoſition of JAMES CHAMBERS, *communicated by David Riddick, Eſq. prothonotary of Waſhington county, Pennſylvania, who in the letter encloſing it ſhews that he entertains the moſt perfect confidence in the truth of Mr.* CHAMBERS.

Waſhington county ſc.

Perſonally came before me Samuel Shannon, Eſq. one of the commonwealth juſtices for the county of Waſhington in the ſtate of Pennſylvania, James Chambers, who being ſworn according to law, depoſeth and ſaith that in the ſpring of the year 1774, he reſided on the frontiers near Baker's Bottom on the Ohio: that he had an intimate companion, with whom he ſometimes lived, named 2 "Edward King:" That a report reached him that Michael Creſap had killed ſome Indians near Grave creek, friends to an In- 3 dian known by the name of "Logan:" That other of his friends following down the river, having received intelligence, and fearing to proceed, left Creſap might fall in with them, encamped near the mouth of Yellow creek, oppoſite Baker's Bottom; that Daniel Greathouſe had determined to kill them: had made the ſecret known to the deponent's companion, King; that the deponent was earneſtly ſolicited to be of the party, and, as an inducement, was told that they would get a great deal of plunder; and further, that the Indians would be made drunk by Baker, and that little danger would follow the expedition. The deponent refuſed to have any hand in killing unoffending people. His companion, King, went with Greathouſe, with divers others, ſome of whom had been collected at a conſiderable diſtance under an idea that Joſhua Baker's family was in danger from the Indians, as war had been commenced between Creſap and them already; that Edward King, as well as others of the party, did not conceal from the deponent the moſt minute circumſtances of this affair; they informed him that Greathouſe, concealing his people went over to the Indian encampments and counted their number, and found that they were too large a party to attack with his ſtrength: that he then requeſted Joſhua Baker, when any of them came to his houſe, (which they had been

Digitized by Google

in the habit of) to give them what rum they could drink, and to let him know when they were in a proper train, and that he would then fall on them: that accordingly they found ſeveral men and two women at Baker's houſe; that one of theſe women had cautioned Greathouſe, when over in the Indian camp, that he had better return home, as the Indian men were drinking, and that having heard of Creſap's attack on their relations down the river, they were angry, and, in a friendly manner, told him to go home. Greathouſe, with his party, fell on them, and killed all except a little girl which the deponent ſaw with the party after the ſlaughter; that the
4 Indians in the camp hearing the firing, manned two canoes, ſuppoſing their friends at Baker's to be attacked, as was ſuppoſed: the party under Greathouſe prevented their landing by a well directed fire, which did execution in the canoes; that Edward King ſhewed the deponent one of the ſcalps.—The deponent further ſaith, that the ſettlements near the river broke up, and he the deponent immediately repaired to Catfiſh's camp, and lived ſometime with Mr. William Huſton; that not long after his arrival, Creſap, with his party, returned from the Ohio, came to Mr. Huſton's and tarried ſome time: that in various converſations with the party, and
2 in particular with a Mr. Smith, who had one arm only, he was told that the Indians were acknowledged and known to be Logan's friends which they had killed, and that he heard the party ſay, that Logan would probably avenge their deaths.

They acknowledged that the Indians paſſed Creſap's encampment on the bank of the river in a peaceable manner, and encamped below him; that they went down and fired on the Indians, and killed ſeveral; that the ſurvivors flew to their arms and fired on Creſap, and wounded one man, whom the deponent ſaw carried on a
2 litter by the party; that the Indians killed by Creſap were not
3 only Logan's relations, but of the women killed at Baker's, one was ſaid and generally believed to be Logan's ſiſter. The deponent further ſaith, that on the relation of the attack by Creſap on the unoffending Indians, he exclaimed in their hearing, that it was an at-

Digitized by Google

rocious murder: on which Mr. Smith threatened the deponent with the tomahawk; so that he was obliged to be cautious, fearing an injury, as the party appeared to have lost, in a great degree, sentiments of humanity as well as the effects of civilization. Sworn and subscribed at Washington, the 20th day of April, Anno Domini 1798.

JAMES CHAMBERS.

Before Samuel Shannon.

Washington county, ſc.

SEAL. I, David Reddick prothonotary of the court of common pleas, for the county of Washington, in the state of Pennsylvania, do certify, that Samuel Shannon, Esq. before whom the within affidavit was made, was, at the time thereof, and still is, a justice of the peace in and for the county of Washington aforesaid; and that full credit is due to all his judicial acts as such as well in courts of justice as thereout.

In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed the seal of my office at Washington, the 26th day of April, Anno Dom. 1798.

DAVID REDDICK.

The certificate of CHARLES POLKE, *of Shelby county, in Kentucky, communicated by the hon. Judge Innes, of Kentucky, who in the letter enclosing it, together with Newland's certificate, and his own declaration of the information given him by Baker, says,* "*I am well acquainted with Jacob Newland, he is a man of integrity. Charles Polke and Joshua Baker both support respectable characters.*"

About the latter end of April or beginning of May 1774, I lived on the waters of Cross creek, about 16 miles from Joshua Baker, who lived on the Ohio, opposite the mouth of Yellow creek. A number of persons collected at my house, and proceeded to the said Baker's and murdered several Indians, among whom was a woman said to be the sister of the Indian chief Logan. The princi-

Digitized by Google

pal leader of the party was one Daniel Greathouſe. To the beſt of my recollection the cauſe which gave riſe to the murder was, a general idea that the Indians were meditating an attack on the frontiers. Capt. Michael Creſap was not of the party; but I recollect that ſome time before the perpetration of the above fact it was currently reported that capt. Creſap had murdered ſome Indians on the Ohio, one or two, ſome diſtance below Wheeling.

Certified by me, an inhabitant of Shelby county and ſtate of Kentucky, this 15th day of November, 1799.

CHARLES POLKE.

The declaration of the honorable JUDGE INNES, *of Frankfort in Kentucky.*

On the 14th of November, 1799, I accidentally met upon the road Joſhua Baker, the perſon referred to in the certificate ſigned by Polke, who informed me that the murder of the Indians in 1774, oppoſite the mouth of Yellow creek, was perpetrated at his houſe by 32 men, led on by Daniel Greathouſe; that 12 were killed and 6 or 8 wounded; among the ſlain was a ſiſter and other relations of the Indian chief Logan. Baker ſays captain Michael Creſap was not of the party; that ſome days preceding the murder at his houſe, two Indians left him and were on their way home; that they fell in with captain Creſap and a party of land improvers on the Ohio, and were murdered, if not by Creſap himſelf, with his approbation; he being the leader of the party, and that he had the information from Creſap.

HARRY INNES.

The declaration of WILLIAM ROBINSON.

William Robinſon, of Clarkeſburg, in the county of Harriſon, and ſtate of Virginia, ſubſcriber to theſe preſents, declares that he was, in the year 1774, a reſident on the weſt fork of Monongahela River, in the county then called Weſt Auguſta, and being in his

Digitized by Google

field on the 12th of July, with two other men, they were surprised by a party of eight Indians, who shot down one of the others and made himself and the remaining one prisoners; this subscriber's wife and four children having been previously conveyed by him for safety to a fort about 24 miles off; that the principal Indian of the party who took them was captain Logan; that Logan spoke English well, and very soon manifested a friendly disposition to this subscriber, and told him to be of good heart, that he would not be killed, but must go with him to his town, where he would probably be adopted in some of their families; but above all things that he must not attempt to run away; that in the course of the journey to the Indian town he generally endeavored to keep close to Logan, who had a great deal of conversation with him, always encouraging him to be cheerful and without fear for that he would not be killed, but should become one of them; and constantly impressing on him not to attempt to run away; that in these conversations he always charged capt. Michael Cresap with the murder of his family: that on his arrival in the town, which was on the 18th of July, he was tied to a stake, and a great debate arose whether he should not be burnt: Logan insisting on having him adopted, while others contended to burn him: that at length Logan prevailed, tied a belt of wampum round him as a mark of adoption, loosed him from the post and carried him to the cabin of an old squaw, where Logan pointed out a person who he said was this subscriber's cousin; and he afterwards understood that the old woman was his aunt, and two others his brothers, and that he now stood in the place of a warrior of the family who had been killed at Yellow creek: that about three days after this Logan brought him a piece of paper, and told him he must write a letter for him, which he meant to carry and leave in some house where he should kill somebody; that he made ink with gun-powder, and the subscriber proceeded to write the letter by his direction, addressing captain Michael Cresap in it and that the purport of it was, to ask "why he had killed his people? That some time before they had killed his people at some place

Digitized by Google

(the name of which the ſubſcriber forgets) which he had forgiven; but ſince that he had killed his people again at Yellow creek, and taken his couſin, a little girl, priſoner; that therefore he muſt war againſt the whites; but that he would exchange the ſubſcriber for his couſin." And ſigned it with Logan's name, which letter Logan took and ſet out again to war; and the contents of this letter, as recited by the ſubſcriber, calling to mind that ſtated by judge Innes, to have been left tied to a war club, in a houſe where a family was murdered, and that being read to the ſubſcriber, he recogniſes it, and declares he verily believes it to have been the identical letter which he wrote, and ſuppoſes he was miſtaken in ſtating as he had done before from memory, that the offer of the exchange was propoſed in the letter; that it is probable it was only promiſed him by Logan, but not put in the letter; that while he was with the old woman, ſhe repeatedly endeavored to make him ſenſible that ſhe had been of the party at Yellow creek, and, by ſigns, ſhewed how they decoyed her friends over the river to drink, and when they were reeling and tumbling about, tomahawked them all, and whenever ſhe entered on this ſubject ſhe was thrown into the moſt violent agitations, and that he afterwards underſtood that, amongſt the Indians killed at Yellow creek, was a ſiſter of Logan very big with child, whom they ripped open, and ſtuck on a pole: that he continued with the Indians till the month of November, when he was releaſed in conſequence of the peace made by them with lord Dunmore: that, while he remained with them, the Indians in general were very kind to him; and eſpecially thoſe who were his adopted relations; but above all, the old woman and family in which he lived, who ſerved him with every thing in their power, and never aſked, nor even ſuffered him to do any labor, ſeeming in truth to conſider and reſpect him, as the friend they had loſt. All which ſeveral matters and things, ſo far as they are ſtated to be of his own knowledge, this ſubſcriber ſolemnly declares to be true, and ſo far as they are ſtated on information from others he believes them to

Digitized by Google

be true. Given and declared under his hand at Philadelphia, this 28th day of February, 1800.

WILLIAM ROBINSON.

The depoſition of col. William M'Kee, of Lincoln county, Kentucky, communicated by the hon. John Brown, one of the ſenators in Congreſs from Kentucky.

Col. William M'Kee of Lincoln county declareth, that in autumn 1774, he commanded as a captain in the Bottetourt Regiment under col. Andrew Lewis, afterwards gen. Lewis; and fought in the battle at the mouth of Kanhaway, on the 10th of October in that year. That after the battle, col. Lewis marched the militia acroſs the Ohio, and proceeded towards the Shawnee towns on Siota; but before they reached the towns, lord Dunmore, who was commander in chief of the army, and had, with a large party thereof, been up the Ohio about Hock Hocking, when the battle was fought, overtook the militia, and informed them of his having ſince the battle concluded a treaty with the Indians; upon which the whole army returned.

And the ſaid William declareth that, on the evening of that day on which the junction of the troops took place, he was in company with lord Dunmore and ſeveral of his officers, and alſo converſed with ſeveral who had been with lord Dunmore at the treaty; ſaid William, on that evening, heard repeated converſations concerning an extraordinary ſpeech made at the treaty, or ſent there by a chieftain of the Indians named Logan, and heard ſeveral attempts at a rehearſal of it. The ſpeech as rehearſed excited the particular attention of ſaid William, and the moſt ſtriking members of it were impreſſed on his memory.

And he declares that when Thomas Jefferſon's Notes on Virginia were publiſhed, and he came to peruſe the ſame, he was ſtruck with the ſpeech of Logan as there ſet forth, as being ſubſtantially the

Digitized by Google

ſame, and accordant with the ſpeech he heard rehearſed in the camp as aforeſaid.

Signed,

WILLIAM M'KEE.

DANVILLE, December 18th, 1799.

We certify that col. William M'Kee this day ſigned the original certificate, of which the foregoing is a true copy, in our preſence.

JAMES SPEED, Jun.
J. H. DEWEES.

The certificate of the honorable STEVENS THOMPSON MASON, one of the ſenators in Congreſs from the ſtate of Virginia.

"*LOGAN's ſpeech, delivered at the treaty, after the battle in which col. LEWIS was killed in* 1774."

[Here follows a copy of the ſpeech agreeing verbatim with that printed in Dixon and Hunter's Virginia Gazette of February 4, 1775, under the Williamſburgh head, at the foot is this certificate.]

"The foregoing is a copy taken by me, when a boy, at ſchool, in the ~~year 1775, or at fartheſt in 1776.~~ and lately found in an old pocket-book, containing papers and manuſcripts of that period."]

STEVENS THOMPSON MASON.

January 20th, 1798.

A copy of LOGAN's ſpeech given by the late general MERCER, who fell in the battle of Trenton, January, 1776, *to* LEWIS WILLIS, *Eſquire, of Frederickſburg, in Virginia, upwards of* 20 *years ago,* (*from the date of February,* 1798,) *communicated through* MANN PAGE, *Eſquire.*

"The ſpeech of LOGAN, a Shawaneſe chief, to lord Dunmore."

[Here follows a copy of the ſpeech agreeing verbatim with that in the Notes on Virginia.]

A copy of LOGAN's SPEECH from the Notes on Virginia having been ſent to captain ANDREW RODGERS of Kentucky, he ſubjoined the following certificate.

Digitized by Google

In the year 1774 I went out with the Virginia Volunteers, and was in the battle at the mouth of Canhawee, and afterwards proceeded over the Ohio to the Indian towns. I did not hear Logan make the above ſpeech; but, from the unanimous accounts of thoſe in camp, I have reaſon to think that ſaid ſpeech was delivered to Dunmore. I remember to have heard the very things contained in the above ſpeech, related by ſome of our people in camp at that time.

ANDREW RODGERS.

The declaration of Mr. JOHN HECKEWELDER, *for ſeveral years a miſſionary from the ſociety of Moravians, among the weſtern Indians.*

In the ſpring of the year 1774, at a time when the interior part of the Indian country all ſeemed peace and tranquil, the villagers on the Muſkinghum were ſuddenly alarmed by two runners (Indians,) who reported "that the Big Knife, (Virginians) had attacked the Mingoe ſettlement on the Ohio, and butchered even the women with their children in their arms, and that Logan's family were among the ſlain." A day or two after this, ſeveral Mingoes made their appearance: among whom were one or two wounded, who had in this manner effected their eſcape. Exaſperated to a high degree, after relating the particulars of this tranſaction, (which for humanity's ſake I forbear to mention,) after reſting ſome time on the treachery of the Big Knives, of their barbarity to thoſe who are their friends, they gave a figurative deſcription of the perpetrators; named Creſap as having been at the head of this murderous act. They made mention of nine being killed, and two wounded; and were prone to take revenge on any perſon of a white color; for which reaſon the miſſionaries had to ſhut themſelves up during their ſtay. From this time terror daily increaſed. The exaſperated friends and relations of theſe murdered women and children, with the nations to whom they belonged, paſſed and repaſſed through the villages of the quiet Delaware towns, in ſearch of white people, making uſe of the moſt abuſive

Digitized by Google

language to these (the Delawares,) since they would not join in taking revenge. Traders had either to hide themselves, or try to get out of the country the best way they could. And even, at this time, they yet found such true friends among the Indians, who, at the risk of their own lives, conducted them with the best part of their property, to Pittsburg; although, (shameful to relate!) these benefactors were, on their return from this million, waylaid, and fired upon by whites, while crossing Big Beaver in a canoe, and had one man, a Shawnese, named Silverheels, (a man of note in his nation) wounded in the body. This exasperated the Shawnese so much, that they, or at least a great part of them, immediately took an active part in the cause; and the Mingoes, (nearest connected with the former,) became unbounded in their rage. A Mr. Jones, son to a respectable family of this neighborhood (Bethlehem,) who was then on his passage up Muskinghum, with two other men, was fortunately espied by a friendly Indian woman, at the falls of Muskinghum, who through motives of humanity alone, informed Jones of the nature of the times, and that he was running right in the hands of the enraged; and put him on the way, where he might perhaps escape the vengeance of the strolling parties. One of Jones's men, fatigued by travelling in the woods, declared he would rather die than remain longer in this situation; and hitting accidentally on a path, he determined to follow the same. A few hundred yards decided *his* fate. He was met by a party of about fifteen Mingoes, (and as it happened almost within sight of White Eyes town,) murdered, and cut to pieces; and his limbs and flesh stuck upon the bushes. White Eyes on hearing the Scalp halloo, ran immediately out with his men, to see what the matter was; and finding the mangled body in this condition, gathered the whole and buried it. But next day when some of the above party found on their return the body interred, they instantly tore up the ground, and endeavored to destroy, or scatter about, the parts at a greater distance. White Eyes, with the Delawares, watching their motions, gathered and interred the same a

Digitized by Google

second time. The war party finding this out, ran furiously into the Delaware village, exclaiming against the conduct of these people, setting forth the cruelty of Cresap towards women and children, and declaring at the same time, that they would, in consequence of this cruelty, serve every white man they should meet with in the same manner. Times grew worse and worse, war parties went out and took scalps and prisoners, and the latter, in hopes it might be of service in saving their lives, exclaimed against the barbarous act which gave rise to these troubles, and against the perpetrators. The name of Greathouse was mentioned as having been an accomplice to Cresap. So detestable became the latter name among the Indians that I have frequently heard them apply it to the worst of things; also in quieting or stilling their children, I have heard them say, Hush! Cresap will fetch you; whereas otherwise, they name the owl. The warriors having afterwards bent their course more toward the Ohio, and down the same, peace seemed with us already on the return; and this became the case soon after the decided battle fought on the Kanhaway. Traders, returning now into the Indian country again, related the story of the above mentioned massacre, *after the same manner and with the same words*, we have heard it related hitherto. *So* the report remained and was believed, by all who resided in the Indian country. *So* it was represented numbers of times, in the peaceable Delaware towns, by the enemy. *So* the christian Indians were continually told they would one day be served. With *this* impression, a petty chief hurried all the way from Wabash in 1779 to take his relations (who were living with the peaceable Delawares near Coshackking,) out of the reach of the Big Knives, in whose friendship he never more would place any confidence. And when this man found that his numerous relations, would not break friendship with the Americans, nor be removed, he took two of his relations (women) off by force, saying "The whole crop shall not be destroyed; I will have seed out of it for a new crop:" alluding to, and repeatedly reminding these of the family of Logan, who, he

Digitized by Google

ſaid, had been real friends to the whites, and yet were cruelly murdered by them.

In Detroit, where I arrived the ſame ſpring, the report reſpecting the murder of the Indians on Ohio (amongſt whom was Logan's family) was the ſame as related above; and on my return to the United States in the fall of 1786, and from that time, whenever and wherever in my preſence, this ſubject was the topic of converſation, I found the report ſtill the ſame; *viz.* that a perſon bearing the name of Creſap, was the author or perpetrator of this deed.

LOGAN was the ſecond ſon of SHIKELLEMUS, a celebrated chief of the Cayuga nation. This chief, on account of his attachment to the Engliſh government, was of great ſervice to the country, having the confidence of all the Six nations as well as that of the Engliſh, he was very uſeful in ſettling diſputes, &c. &c. He was highly eſteemed by Conrad Weiſſer, Eſq. (an officer for government in the Indian department,) with whom he acted conjunctly, and was faithful unto his death. His reſidence was at Shamokin, where he took great delight in acts of hoſpitality to ſuch of the white people whoſe buſineſs led them that way.* His name and fame were ſo high on record, that count Zinzendorf, when in this country in 1742, became deſirous of ſeeing him, and actually viſited him at his houſe in Shamokin.† About the year 1772, Logan was introduced to me, by an Indian friend; as ſon to the late reputable chief Shikellemus, and as a friend to the white people. In the courſe of converſation, I thought him a man of ſuperior talents than Indians generally were. The ſubject turning on vice and immorality, he confeſſed his too great ſhare of this, eſpecially his fondneſs for liquor. He exclaimed againſt the white people,

* The preceding account of Shikellemus, (Logan's father) is copied from manuſcripts of the Rev. C. Pyrlocæus, written between the years 1741, and 1748.

† See G. H. Hoſkiel's hiſtory of the Miſſion of the United Brethren, &c. Part II, Chap. II. Page 31.

Digitized by Google

for impoſing liquors upon the Indians; he otherwiſe admired their ingenuity; ſpoke of gentlemen, but obſerved that the Indians unfortunately had but few of theſe as their neighbors, &c. He ſpoke of his friendſhip to the white people, wiſhed always to be a neighbor to them, intended to ſettle on the Ohio, below Big Beaver; was (to the beſt of my recollection) then encamped at the mouth of this river, (Beaver,) urged me to pay him a viſit, &c. *Note.* I was then living in the Moravian Town on this river, in the neighborhood of Cuſkuſkee. In April 1773, while on my paſſage down the Ohio for Muſkinghum, I called at Logan's ſettlement; where I received every civility I could expect from ſuch of the family as were at home.

Indian reports concerning Logan, after the death of his family, ran to this; that he exerted himſelf during the Shawnee war (then ſo called) to take all the revenge he could, declaring he had loſt all confidence in the white people. At the time of negociation, he declared his reluctance in laying down the hatchet, not having (in his opinion) yet taken ample ſatisfaction; yet, for the ſake of the nation, he would do it. His expreſſions from time to time, denoted a deep melancholy. Life (ſaid he) had become a torment to him: he knew no more what pleaſure was: He thought it had been better if he had never exiſted, &c. &c. Report further ſtates, that he became in ſome meaſure delirious, declared he would kill himſelf, went to Detroit, drank very freely, and did not ſeem to care what he did, and what became of himſelf. In this condition he left Detroit, and on his way between that place and Miami, was murdered. In October, 1781, (while a priſoner on my way to Detroit,) I was ſhown the ſpot where this ſhall have happened. Having had an opportunity ſince laſt June of ſeeing the Rev. David Zeiſberger, ſenior, miſſionary to the Delaware nation of Indians, who had reſided among the ſame on Muſkinghum, at the time when the murder was committed on the family of Logan, I put the following queſtions to him. 1. Who he underſtood it was that had committed the murder on Logan's family? And ſecondly,

Digitized by Google

whether he had any knowledge of a ſpeech ſent to lord Dunmore by Logan, in conſequence of this affair, &c. To which Mr. Zeiſberger's anſwer was: That he had, from that time when this murder was committed to the preſent day, firmly believed the common report (which he had never heard contradicted,) *viz.* that one Creſap was the author of the maſſacre; or that it was committed by his orders: and that he had known Logan as a boy, had frequently ſeen him from that time and doubted not in the leaſt, that Logan had ſent ſuch a ſpeech to lord Dunmore on this occaſion, as he underſtood from me had been publiſhed; that expreſſions of that kind from Indians were familiar to him; that Logan in particular, was a man of quick comprehenſion, good judgment and talents. Mr. Zeiſberger has been a miſſionary upwards of fifty years; his age is about eighty; ſpeaks both the language of the Onondagoes and the Delawares; reſides at preſent on the Muſkinghum, with his Indian congregation; and is beloved and reſpected by all who are acquainted with him.

JOHN HECKEWELDER.

From this teſtimony the following hiſtorical ſtatement reſults:

In April or May 1774, a number of people being engaged in looking out for ſettlements on the Ohio, information was ſpread among them, that the Indians had robbed ſome of the *land-jobbers*, as thoſe adventurers were called. Alarmed for their ſafety, they collected together at Wheeling creek. Hearing that there were two Indians and ſome traders a little above Wheeling, captain Michael Creſap, one of the party, propoſed to waylay and kill them. The propoſition, though oppoſed, was adopted. A party went up the river, with Creſap at their head, and killed the two Indians.

ft murder
f the two
ndians by
Creſap.

The ſame afternoon it was reported that there was a party of Indians on the Ohio, a little below Wheeling. Creſap and his party immediately proceeded down the river, and encamped on the bank. The Indians paſſed him peaceably, and encamped at the mouth of Grave creek, a little below. Creſap and his party attacked them

d murder
n Grave
reek.

Digitized by Google

and killed several. The Indians returned the fire, and wounded one of Cresap's party. Among the slain of the Indians were some of Logan's family. Colonel Zane indeed expresses a doubt of it; but it is affirmed by Huston and Chambers. Smith, one of the murderers, said they were known and acknowledged to be Logan's friends, and the party themselves generally said so: boasted of it in presence of Cresap; pretended no provocation; and expressed their expectations that Logan would probably avenge their deaths.

Massacre a Baker's Bottom op posite Yel low creek by Great house.

Pursuing these examples, Daniel Greathouse and one Tomlinson, who lived on the opposite side of the river from the Indians, and were in habits of friendship with them, collected at the house of Polke on cross creek, about 16 miles from Baker's Bottom a party of 32 men. Their object was to attack a hunting encampment of Indians, consisting of men, women and children, at the mouth of Yellow creek, some distance above Wheeling.—They proceeded, and when arrived near Baker's Bottom, they concealed themselves, and Greathouse crossed the river to the Indian camp. Being among them as a friend, he counted them, and found them too strong for an open attack with his force. While here, he was cautioned by one of the women not to stay, for that the Indian men were drinking, and having heard of Cresap's murder of *their relations* at Grave creek, were angry, as she pressed him, in a friendly manner, to go home; whereupon, after inviting them to come over and drink, he returned to Baker's, which was a tavern, and desired that when any of them should come to his house he would give them as much rum as they would drink. When his plot was ripe and a sufficient number of them were collected at Baker's, and intoxicated, he and his party fell on them and massacred the whole, except a little girl, whom they preserved as a prisoner. Among these was the very woman who had saved his life, by pressing him to retire from the drunken wrath of her friends, when he was spying their camp at Yellow creek. Either she herself, or some other of the murdered women, was the sister of Logan, very big with child, and inhumanly and indecently butchered; and there were others of his relations who fell there.

Digitized by Google

4thmurder by Great-houſe.

The party on the other ſide of the river, alarmed for their friends at Baker's, on hearing the report of the guns, manned two canoes and ſent them over. They were received, as they approached the ſhore, by a well directed fire from Greathouſe's party, which killed ſome, wounded others, and obliged the reſt to put back. Baker tells us there were twelve killed, and ſix or eight wounded.

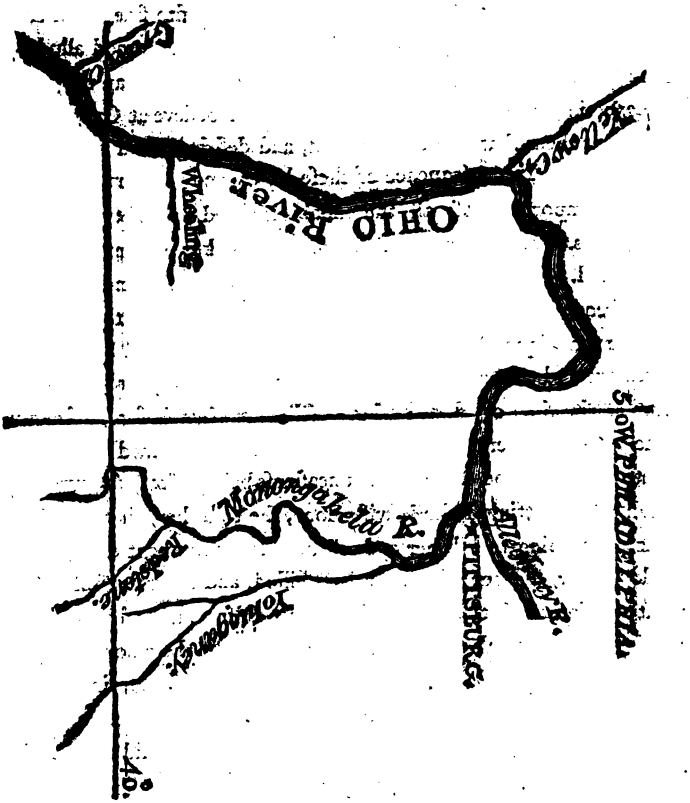
This commenced the war, of which Logan's war-club and note left in the houſe of a murdered family, was the notification. In the courſe of it, during the enſuing ſummer, great numbers of innocent men, women and children, fell victims to the tomahawk and ſcalping knife of the Indians, till it was arreſted in the autumn following by the battle at Point-pleaſant and as the pacification with lord Dunmore, at which the ſpeech of Logan was delivered.

Of the genuineneſs of that ſpeech nothing need be ſaid. It was known to the camp where it was delivered: it was given out by lord Dunmore and his officers; it ran through the public papers of theſe ſtates; ~~was rehearſed as an exerciſe at ſchools~~; publiſhed in the papers and periodical works of Europe; and all this, a dozen years before it was copied into the Notes on Virginia. In fine gen. Gibſon concludes the queſtion for ever, by declaring that he received it from Logan's hand, delivered it to lord Dunmore, tranſlated it for him, and that the copy in the Notes on Virginia is a faithful copy.

The popular account of theſe tranſactions, as ſtated in the Notes on Virginia, appears on collecting exact information, imperfect and erroneous in its details. It was the belief of the day; but how far its errors were the prejudice of Creſap the reader will now judge. That he and thoſe under him, murdered two Indians above Wheeling: that they murdered a larger number at Grave creek, among whom were a part of the family and relations of Logan, cannot be queſtioned; and as little that this led to the maſſacre of the reſt of the family at Yellow creek. Logan imputed the whole to Creſap in his war-note and peace-ſpeech; the Indians generally imputed it,

Digitized by Google

to Creſap: Lord Dunmore and his officers imputed it to Creſap: the country with one accord imputed it to him: and whether he were innocent let the univerſal verdict now declare.



The declaration of JOHN SAPPINGTON, received after the publication of the preceding Appendix.

I, JOHN SAPPINGTON, *declare myſelf to be intimately acquainted with all the circumſtances reſpecting the deſtruction of Logan's family, and do give in the following narrative a true ſtatement of that affair.*

Logan's family (if it was his family) was not killed by Creſap, nor with his knowledge, nor by his conſent, but by the Greathouſes and their aſſociates. They were killed 30 miles above

Wheeling, near the mouth of Yellow Creek. Logan's camp was on one ſide of the river Ohio, and the houſe where the murder was committed, oppoſite to it on the other ſide. They had encamped there only four or five days, and during that time had lived peaceably and neighborly with the whites on the oppoſite ſide, until the very day the affair happened. A little before the period alluded to, letters had been received by the inhabitants from a man of great influence in that country, and who was then I believe at Capteener, informing them that war was at hand, and deſiring them to be on their guard. In conſequence of theſe letters and other rumours of the ſame import, almoſt all the inhabitants fled for ſafety into the ſettlements. It was at the houſe of one Baker the murder was committed. Baker was a man who ſold rum, and the Indians had made frequent viſits at his houſe, induced, probably, by their fondneſs for that liquor. He had been particularly deſired by Creſap to remove and take away his rum, and he was actually preparing to move at the time of the murder. The evening before, a ſquaw came over to Baker's houſe, and by her crying ſeemed to be in great diſtreſs. The cauſe of her uneaſineſs being aſked, ſhe refuſed to tell; but getting Baker's wife alone, ſhe told her, that the Indians were going to kill her and all her family the next day, that ſhe loved her, did not wiſh her to be killed, and therefore told her what was intended, that ſhe might ſave herſelf. In conſequence of this information, Baker got a number of men to the amount of 21 to come to his houſe and they were all there before morning. A council was held, and it was determined, that the men ſhould lie concealed in the back apartment; that if the Indians did come and behaved themſelves peaceably, they ſhould not be moleſted, but if not, the men were to ſhew themſelves and act accordingly. Early in the morning 7 Indians, 4 men and 3 ſquaws, came over.—Logan's brother was one of them. They immediately got rum, and all, except Logan's brother, became very much intoxicated. At this time all the men were concealed, except the man of the houſe, Baker, and two others who ſtaid out with him. Thoſe Indians came unarmed. After ſome time Logan's brother took down a coat and hat belonging to Baker's brother-in-law, who lived with him,

Digitized by Google

and put them on, and ſetting his arms a kimbo began to ſtrut about, till at length coming up to one of the men, he attempted to ſtrike him, ſaying "white man, ſon of a bitch." The white man, whom he treated thus, kept out of his way for ſome time; but growing irritated he jumped to his gun, and ſhot the Indian as he was making to the door with the coat and hat on him. The men who lay concealed, then ruſhed out and killed the whole of them, excepting one child, which I believe is yet alive. But before this happened, one with two, the other with five Indians, all naked, painted, and armed completely for war, were diſcovered to ſtart from the ſhore on which Logan's camp was. Had it not been for this circumſtance, the white men would not have acted as they did; but this confirmed what the ſquaw had told before. The white men, having killed as aforeſaid the Indians in the houſe, ranged themſelves along the bank of the river, to receive the canoes. The canoe with the two Indians came near, being the foremoſt. Our men fired upon them and killed them both. The other canoe then went back. After this two other canoes ſtarted, the one containing 11, the other 7 Indians, painted and armed as the firſt. They attempted to land below our men; but were fired upon, had one killed, and retreated, at the ſame time firing back. To the beſt of my recollection there were three of the Greathouſes engaged in this buſineſs. This is a true repreſentation of the affair from beginning to end. I was intimately acquainted with Creſap, and know he had no hand in that tranſaction. He told me himſelf afterwards at Redſtone old fort, that the day before Logan's people were killed, he, with a ſmall party, had an engagement with a party of Indians on Captteener, about 44 miles lower down, Logan's people were killed at the mouth of Yellow creek on the 24th of May, 1774, and on the 23d, the day before Creſap was engaged as already ſtated. I know likewiſe that he was generally blamed for it, and believed by all who were not acquainted with the circumſtances, to have been the perpetrator of it. I know that he deſpiſed and hated the Greathouſes ever afterwards on account of it. I was intimately acquainted with general Gibſon, and ſerved under him during the late war, I have a diſcharge from him now lying in the land office at Rich-

Digitized by Google

mond, to which I refer any perſon for my character, who might be diſpoſed to ſcruple my veracity. I was likewiſe at the treaty held by lord Dunmore with the Indians at Chelicothe. As for the ſpeech ſaid to have been delivered Logan on that occaſion, it might have been, or might not, for any thing I know, as I never heard of it till long afterwards. I do not believe that Logan had any relations killed except his brother. Neither of the ſquaws who were killed was his wife. Two of them were old women, and the third, with her child which was ſaved, I have the beſt reaſon in the world to believe was the wife and child of general Gibſon. I know he educated the child, and took care of it, as if it had been his own. Whether Logan had a wife or not, I cannot ſay; but it is probable that as he was a chief, he conſidered them all as his people. All this I am ready to be qualified to at any time.

JOHN SAPPINGTON.

Atteſt, SAMUEL M'KEE, Junr.

Madiſon County, Feb. 13th, 1808.

I do certify further that the above named John Sappington told me, at the ſame time and place at which he gave me the above narrative, that he himſelf was the man who ſhot the brother of Logan in the houſe as above related, and that he likewiſe killed one of the Indians in one of the canoes, which came over from the oppoſite ſhore.

He likewiſe told me, that Creſap never ſaid an angry word to him about the matter, although he was frequently in company with Creſap, and indeed had been, and continued to be, in habits of intimacy with that gentleman, and was always befriended by him on every occaſion. He further told me, that after they had perpetrated the murder, and were flying into the ſettlements, he met with Creſap (if I recollect right, at Redſtone old fort,) and gave him a ſcalp, a very large fine one, as he expreſſed it, and adorned with ſilver. This ſcalp I think he told me, was the ſcalp of Logan's brother; though as to this I am not abſolutely certain.

Certifyed by SAMUEL M'KEE, Junr.

Digitized by Google

FINIS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

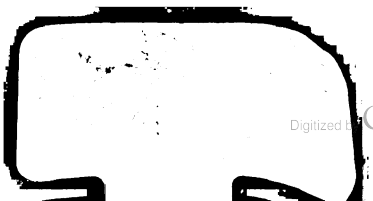
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

OCT 1 0 1930



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

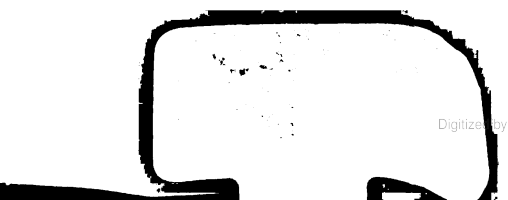
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

OCT 1 0 1930



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

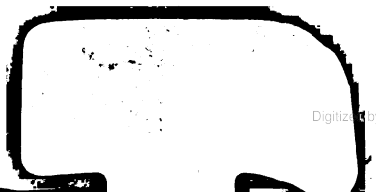
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

OCT 1 0 1930



Digitized by Google